Found in my files Nov. 24/72 Evidently pre-dates publy INSIGHT Protoky put together in early 'ss-

els this my typing? At looks tike it. A.C. 4/22/90

0

0

O

0

73F

NW 24/72

INSIGHT

Buch

ø

Sale Sec.

PART I:		INSIGHT AS ACTIVITY	
CHAFTER I:		THE ELEMENTE OF INSIGHT	34
	1.	A Drematic Instance.	35
	2.	Definition.	40
	2.1 2.2 2.3 2.4 2.5 2.6 2.7 2.8	The Clue, The Concepts. The Image. The Question. Genesis. Nominal and Explanatory Definition. Primitive Terms. Implicit Definition.	40 41 34 4 56 7 9
• • •	3.	Higher Viewpoints.	50
	3.1 3.2 3.3 3.4 3.5 3.5 3.7	Positive Integers. Addition Tables. The Homogeneous Expansion. Need of a Higher Viewpoint. Formulation of the Higher Viewpoint. Successive Higher Viewpoints. The Significance of Symbolism.	50 52 55 55 55 55 55 55 55
	4.	Inverse Insight.	59
	5.	The Empirical Residue.	68
OHAPTER II:		THE HEURISTIC STRUCTURES OF EMPIRICAL MEN	THOD
,	1.1 1.2	Similarities of Mathematical and Scientific Insights. Dissimilarities.	75 76

•

Insight: Part I

CHAPTER II:

G

Ģ

0

	2.	Classical Heuristic Structures.	79
		An Illustration from Algebra.	79
		"Naturo".	80
		Classification and Correlation.	81 97
		Differential Equations.	83 85
		Xxxxxxxxx Invariance.	85 97
		XEqxivelexex	86 (6)
	∠₊φ	Summary.	00 (0)
	3.	Concrete Inferences from Classical Laws	89
	4.	Statistical Heuristic Structures.	92
		Elementary Contrasts.	92
		The Inverse Insight.	94
		The Meaning of Probability.	96
		Analogy in Heuristic Structures.	99
	4.5	Some Further Questions.	103
	5.	Survey.	107
			7
CHAPTER III:		THE CANONS OF EMPIRICAL METHOD.	108
	1,	The Canon of Selection.	110
	1.1	The Restriction to Sensible Data.	112
	1.2	What Are Sensible Data?	113
	2,	The Canon of Operations.	115
	3.	The Canon of Relevance.	119
	4.	The Canon of Parsimony.	122
	4.1	Classical Laws.	123
	4.2	Statistical Laws.	127
	· • •	·	+- 1
`	5.	The Canon of Complete Explanation.	130
	б.	The Canon of Statistical Residues.	134
	6.1	The General Argument.	134
	6.2	The Notion of Abstraction,	137
	6.3	The Abstractness of Classical Laws,	139
	6.4	Systematic Unification and Imaginative	
		Synthesic.	142
	6,5	The Existence of Statistical Residues.	146
	6,51		146
	6.52		148
	6.53		
		Diverging Series.	150

0

6.6 The General Character of Statistical 152 Theories 152 1**50** 6.61 Events 6.62 Not Processes.
6.63 Only Observable Events.
6.64 Special Not General Relativity 160 160 6.65 Use of Classical Concepts.
6.66 Images and Parsimony.
6.67 A Principle of Uncertainty. 160 162 163 165 6.7 Indeterminism and the Non-Systematic 164 CHAPTER IV: THE COMPLEMENTARITY OF CLASSICAL AND STATISTICAL **6**67 INVESTIGATIONS. 171 1. Complementarity in the Knowing. 1,1 Complementary Heuristic Structures. 171 171 1,2 Complementary Procedures, 1.3 Complementary Formulations. 175 144 Complementary Modes of Abstraction. 178 180 1,5 Complementarity in Verification. 182 1-6 Complementarity in Deta Explained. 185 1.7 Summary. Complementarity in the Known. 187 2. 2,1 General Characteristics of the View. 187 191 2,2 Schemes of Recurrence. 195 2.3 The Probability of Schemes. 197 2.4 Emergent Frobability. Consequences of Emergent Probability. 202 2.5 Clarification by Contrast. 209 3. 3.1 209 The Aristotelian World View. 3.2 The Galilean World View. 211 214 3.3 The Darwinien World View. 3.4 218 Indeterminism. 4. 225 Conclusion. SPACE AND TIME. 226 CHAPTER V: A Problem Peculiar to Physica. 227 1/ 1.1 Invariant and Relative Expressions. 227 1.2 Their Ground in Abstraction. 228 1.3 Abstraction in Physics. 229 2, The Description of Space and Time. 230 2.1 Extensions and Durations, 230 Descriptive Definitions. 231 2,2 2.3 Frames of Reference, 232 2.4 Transformations. 234 Generalized Geometry. 2.5 235 2,6 A Logical Note. 238 The Abstract Intelligibility of Space and Time 239 3.1 The Theorem. 241 3.2 3.3 243 Euclidean Geometry. Absolute Space. 246

0

CHAPTER III:

Ò

Chpater V.

;	3.6 4.	Rode and Clocks. The Elementary Paradox. The Generic Notion of Measurement.	250 254 257 259 261 266 270
	5.	The Concrete Intelligibility of Space and Time.	284
CHAPTER VI	:	COMFON SENSE AND ITS SUBJECT.	287
	1.	Common Sense as Intellectual.	289
	2.2 2.5 2.4 2.5 2.5 2.5 2.71 2.72 2.71 2.72 2.74 2.75 2.76	The Subjective Field of Common Sense. Patterns of Experience. The Biological Pattern. The Aesthetic Pattern. The Intellectual Pattern. The Dramatic Pattern. Elements in the Dramatic Subject. Drematic Bias, Scotosis. Repression. Inhibition. Performance. A Common Problem. A Piece of Evidence. A Note on Method.	3 02 3 05 3 05 3 12 3 19 3 23 3 24 3 25 3 26 3 28 3 37 3 43
CHAPTER VI	[]:	COMMON SENSE AS OBJECT	349
	8.3		3 50 357 366 366 378 381 381 395 395 390 407
CHAPTER V	III:	THINGS	412
	1. 2. 3. 4. 5. 6. 7.	The General Notion of the Thing. Bodies. Genus as Explanatory. Things within Things. Things and Emergent Probability. Species as Explanatory. Concluding Summary.	413 421 427 432 434 439 447

0

0

453 CHAPTER IX: THE NOTION OF JUDGMENT CHAPTER X: 465 REFLECTIVE UNDERSTANDING The General Form of Reflective Insight 467 1. 469 2. Concrete Judgments of Fect. 3. 472 Insights into Concrete Situations. 479 Concrete Analogies and Generalizations. 5. 481 Common Sense. 497 Probable Judgments. 506 7. Analytic Propositions and Principles. 8, 514 Mathematical Judgments. 523 9. Summary. GNARIER PART II: INSIGHT AS KNOWLEDGE CHAPTER XI: XINCIAN SELF-AFFIRMATION 525 526 The Notion of Consciousness. 1. Empirical, Intelligent, Rational Consa 529 2. 3. 4 533 The Unity of Consc.se. 535 The Unity as Given. 5**9**8 540 5. Self-Affirmation. Self-Affinmation as I manent Law. Description and Explantion. 546 7. 8. 550 The Impossibility of Revision. 9. Self-Affirmation in the Possibility of 551 Any Judgment of Fact. 10. 555 Contrest with Kentien Analysis. 560 11. Contrast with Relativist Analysis. 569 CHAPTER XII: THE NOTION OF BEING 569 A Definition. 1. 2. An Unrestricted Notion. 573 3. 4. 576 A Spontaneous Notion. An All-Pervasive Notion. 581 5. . 583 The Core of Meaning. 586 Pu_zles. 7. Other Theories of the Notion. 593 CHAPTER XIII: THE NOTION OF OBJECTIVITY 609 1. The Principal Notion. 610 2. Absolute Objectivity. 613 Normative Obje. 616 3. 4. Experiential Obj.y 619 5. Charactoristics of the Notion. 622 CHAPTER XIV: THE METHOD OF METAPHYSICS 625 1. The Underlying Problem. 625 A Definition of Metaphysics. 2. 633 Method in Metaphysics. 643 The Dielectic of Method in Metaphysics 651 4.1 Deductive Methods. 653 4.2 Universal Doubt. 662 4.3 Empiricism. 668 4.4 Common Sense Eclecticism. 676 4.5 Negelian Dialectic, 683 4.6

Scientific Method in Philosophy.

688

and the second state of the se

0

699 THE BLEMENTS OF METAPHYSICS 700 Potency, Form, and Act. 1. 2. 705 Central and Conjugate Forma. 710 3. Explanatory General and Species. **4**. 718 Potency and Limitation. 5. 722 Potency and Finality. 734 The Notion of Development. 747 Genetic Method. 748 7. 1 General Notion. 756 Organic Development. 7.2 7.3 714 763 Psychic and Intellectual Development. 767 Human Development. 7.5 784 Counter-Positions. 8. 791 Summary. CHAPTER XVI: METAPHYSICS AS SCIENCE 798 1. 799 Distinctions. 802 Relations. 2. The Meaning of the Metaphysical Elements 813 3. 813 3.1 What Are the Mataphysical Slements? 3.2 816 Sognitional or Ontological Slements? The Nature of Mataphysical Equivalence 822 3.4 The Significance of Metap. Xkementsy 830 Equivalence. The Unity of Froportionate Being. 835 835 837 4.1 The Unity of the Proportionste Universe 4.2 The Unity of a Concrate Being. 844 4.3 The Unity of Man. 854 4.4 Summery. 855 5. Metaphysics as Science. METAPHYSICS AS DIALECTIC CHAPTER XVII: 870 Metaphysics, Mystery, and Myth. 873 1. 874 1,1 The Sense of the Unknown. 1.2 The Cenesis of Adequate Self-Knowledge 879 883 Mythic Consc.88 1.3 1.4 Myth and Akkagaray Metaphysics. 894 1.5 896 Myth and Allegory. 1.6 The Notion of Mystery. 900 The Notion of Truth. 905 2. 2.1 The Criterion of Truth. 906 2.2 The Definition of Truth. 910 2.3 The Catological Aspect of Truth. 911 2.4 Truth and Expression. 913 2.5 The Appropriation of Truth, 922 The Truth of Interpretation. 929 3. 3334567 929 The Problem. The Notion of a Universal Viewpoint 934 941 Levels and Sequences of Expression. 948 Limitations of the Trestise. Interpretation and Method. 9**9**96 The Sketch, 960 3.7 Counter-Positions. 964 3.8 Some Canons for a Methodical Hermeneutics 973 3.9 Conclusion. 987

Ô

CHAPTER XV:

a an an an the state of the state

0

G

CHAPTER XVIII:	THE POSSIBILITY OF STHICS	98 9
1.	The Mation of the Cool	991
111	The Notion of the Good.	995
	Levels of the Good.	
1.2		995 999
1.3	The Notion of Velue.	1002
1.4		1006
1.5		
2.		1012
2.1	The Significance of Statistical Residues	
2.2		1014
2.3		1015
2,4		1017
2.5	The Decision.	1021
2.6	Freedom,	1029
3.	The Froblem of Liberation.	1035
SXXRIERXXXXXXX 3.1		1035
3.2		1039
3.3		
3,4	Moral Impotence.	1048
3.5	The Problem of Liberation.	1054
CHAPTER XIX:	GENERAL TRANSCENDENT UNOWLEDGE	1061
1.	The Notion of Transcendence.	1062
2.	The Immanent Source of Transcendence,	1065
	The Hotion of Transcendent Knowledge.	1070
3. 4.	The Freliminaries to Conceiving the	- •
•	Transcendent Esizy: Idea.	1074
5.	The Idea 5 f Being,	1079
6.	The Frimary Component in the Idea	
- •	of Being.	1083
7.	The Secondary Component in the Idea	
	of Being.	1088
8.	Causality.	1092
9.	The Notion of God.	1103
10	The Affirmation of God.	1124
11.	Comparisons and Contrasts.	1138
-		
CHAPTER XX:	SPECIAL TRANSCENDENT KNOWLEDGE.	1159
1,	The Problem.	1157
2.	The Existence of a Solution,	1166
3.	The Heuristic Structure of the Solution	
4-	The Notion of Belief.	1182
4.1	The General Context of Belief.	1183
4.2	The Analysis of Belief.	1189
4.3	The Critique of Beliefe.	1200
4 4	A Logical Note.	1208
5.	Resumption of the Heuristic Structure	0
2-	of the Solution.	1213
. 6,	The Identification of the Solution.	1230
		,0
SPILOGUE		1232

0

f T

0

a sector a s

i. . .

0

1232

INSIGHT

PREFACE

Rational self-consciousness is a peak above the clouds. Intelligent and reasonable, responsible and free, scientific and metaphysical, it stands above romantic spontaneity and the psychological depths, historical determinism and social engineering, the disconcerted existential subject and the undeciphered symbols of the artist and the modernist.

Yet if man can scale the summit of his inner being, also he can fail to advert to the possibility of the ascent or, again, he can begin the climb only to lose his way. If then he knows himself as in fact he is, he can know no more than that he has been cast into the world to be afflicted with questions he does not answer and with aspirations he does not fulfil. For it is the paradox of man that what he is by nature is so much less than what he can become: and it is the tragedy of man that the truth, which portrays him as actually he is, can descend like an iron curtain to frustrate what he would and might be.

O

(2)

Preface

C

С

Facts, it is said, are stubborn things. But there is a sense in which, I believe, it is true to say that the facts about man can be out-flanked. For a change in man, a development of potentialities that are no less real because, like all potentialities they are latent, not only is itself a fact but also can be a permanent source of new facts that cumulatively alter the complexion of the old.

So it is that the present work is a program rather than an argument. It begins not by assuming premises but by presuring readers. It advances not by deducing conclusions from the truths of a religious faith or from the principles of a philosophy but by issuing to readers an invitation, ever more precise and more detailed, to apprehend, to appropriate, to envisage in all its consequences, the liner focus of their own intelligence and reasonableness. That focus, it will be claimed, is insight. But to apprehend the focus is to gain insight into insight, to pierce the outer verbal and conceptual exhibitions of mathematics, of science, and of common sense, and to penetrate to the inner dynamism of intelligent inquiry and critical reflection. To appropriate the focus is both to know and to know what it is to know one's own intelligence, one's own reasonableness, one's own essential and restrictedly effective freedom. To envisage the focus in the full range of its implications is to discover for oneself what is meant by being, by objectivity, by metaPreface

physics, by ethics, by God, and by evil.

Frankly, even as a program, even as a sketch that offers only to indicate the detailed map that is needed, the present work may be reproached for excessive ambition. But if I may borrow a phrase from Ortega y Gasset, one has to strive to sount to the level of one's time. The twentieth century has been described as the end of the Renaissance. Some four centuries ago there was projected a new world: new nations had arisen in new political constellations; a new art was matched with the promise of a new science; and new philosophies were disseminated through a new education. That new world has been realized, but the ideas that fostered its genesis have been discredited by its maturity. What was so new has become so old. To have been educated is no longer a matter of speaking Latin and writing Greek. Modern art would puzzle Rafaello, as modern technology would astound da Vinci. The new nations are not in Europe, and the issues of modern politics seem transcribed from the pages of Utopia. Einstein has revised momentously the thought of Galileo, and Heisenberg has contended that good Laplace, like Homer, nods. The novel outlook that is transforming the natural sciences cannot but affect profoundly the methods that were transferred with so sedulous a fidelity from the natural to the human sciences. Not even Renaiscance ridicule of the Middle Ages has been able to prevent a rebirth of interest

3

3

C

 \boldsymbol{C}

Koffaceo

Proface

in logic. Not even the Enlightenment's insistence on the autonomy of man has been able to prevent the recurrence of theological themes under the guise of existentialist philosophy.

do it is that a new world has been bequeathed us and yet we, the heirs of the Renaissance, have been denied its spirit of bold confidence, of venturous assurance. For we know too such in too many fields, we have witnessed too much suffering in too many unexpected quarters, to purchase confidence by an easy exuberence of feeling or to accept words of assurance without answers to our questions. Nor was the basic question missed, when the late Prof. Ernst Cassirer, towards the end of a long and highly productive career, endeavored to communicate within a brief compass some of the main conclusions of his vast erudition and ever penetrating thought. Just what is man? Answers, he remarked, have been worked out by theologians and scientists, by politicians and sociologists, by biologists and psychologists, by ethnologists and economists. But not only do the many answers not agree, not only is there lacking some generally accepted principle that would select one and reject the others, but even within specialized fields there seems to be no method that can confront basic issues without succusbing to individual temperament and personal evaluations.

In the midst of this widespread disorientation, man's problem of self-knowledge ceases to be simply the

individual concern inculcated by the ancient sage. It takes on the dimensions of a social crisis. It can be read as the historical issue of the twentioth century. If in that balance human intelligence and reasonableness, human responsibility and freedom, are to prevail, then they must be summoned from the dim and confused realm of latent factors and they must burst forth in the full power of self-awareness and self-possession.

If such is the urgency of personal appropriation of rational self-consciousness, the difficulty of achievement should not discourage attempts at making a beginning. If the extent and the complexity of modern knowledge preclude the possibility in our time both of the <u>nome univer-</u> <u>sale</u> of the Renaissance and of the medieval writer of a <u>Summa</u>, at least the collaboration of many contains a promise of success, where the unaided individual would have to despair.

Still a collaboration has its conditions. It supposes a common vision of a common goal. It supposes at least a tentative idea that would unify and coordinate separate efforts in different fields. It supposes a central nucleus that somehow could retain its identity yet undergo all the modifications and enrichments that could be poured into its capacious frame from specialized investigations.

It is with the conditions, preliminary to an effective collaboration, that the present work is concerned.

Proface

О

Preface

C

C

For in the measure that potential collaborators move towards a personal appropriation of their rational selfconsciousness, in the same measure they will begin to attain the needed common vision of the common goal. In the measure that they discover in themcelves the structure of developing intelligence, in the same measure they will share a tentative idea that can unify and coordinate separate efforts in different fields. In the measure that they reach the invariants of intellectual development, in the same measure they will possess a central nucleus that retains its identity through all the possible developments of human intelligence.

6) 6

Prof. Cassirer has told us that, from the viewpoint of a phenomenology of human culture, the explanatory definition of man is <u>animal symbolicum</u> rather than <u>animal rationale</u>. But in the measure that men appropriate their rational self-consciousness, not only do they reestablish the <u>animal rationale</u> but also they break through the phenomenological veil. For, at will be argued, they can reach a universal viewpoint from which individual temperament can be discounted, personal evaluations can be criticized, and the many and disparate reports on man, emanating from experts in various fields, can be welded into a single view.

But if I believe that man's self-awareness and self-possession can add a further, over#arching component to Prof. Cassirer's portrayal of man, it is not to be over-

Proface

С

looked that a possibility is claimed and not an achievement. I could not convey my meaning without venturing into many fields, into mathematics and physics, into the subtleties of common sense and depth psychology, into the processes of history, the intricacies of interpretation, the dialectic of the philosophies, and the possibility of transcendent knowledge. I would not wish anyone to entertain the fanciful nonsense that I can speak with authority or even competence in so many fields. I do not expect many experts to recognize their science in the formulations that sult my purpose. Yet, perhaps, I may hope that there will be some that share my preoccupations and interests. that will divine what I an endeavoring to s ay and will proceed to say it more adequately, that will grasp how my ignorance and oversights can be remedied without completely invalidating the fundamental structures that make possible a compon vision of a compon goal. Finally, if in any measure that hope is calculad, the relative isolation of my efforts will have ended and the preliminary conditions will begin to be fulfilled for the collaboration I would merely initiate.

It is customary to conclude a preface with an acknowledgement of one's indebtedness. Naturally I am inclined to think in the first place of the teachers and writers who have left their impress upon me in the course of the twenty-seven years since first I was initiated into cpistemological issues. But so long a gestation contains too many half-lights, too many detours, for me to indicate

Preface

C

in a brief yet intelligible fashion my proximate sources. g So it is that I must be content to restrict my expression of gratitude to immediate benefactors: to the staff of L'Immaculée Conception, Montroal, where the underlying studies on <u>Gratia Operans</u> and <u>Verbum</u>² were underlying studies on <u>Gratia Operans</u> and <u>Verbum</u>² were underlying the staff of the Jesuit Seminary, Toronto, where I enjoyed the freedom to write the present work; to the Rev. Joseph Wulftange, Joseph Clark, Norris Clarke, Frederick Crowe, Frederick Copleston, and Andrew Godin, who <u>were</u> generously read the typescript and gave no the benefit of reactions and criticiams from specialists in different fields; to the Rev. Fatrick Flunkett who labored (to my shame, rather vainly) to reduce the soleciams of my style; and to the Rev. Eric <u>Offannagen</u> O'Cenner who was over ready to allow me to draw upon his knowledge of mathematics and of science.

June 1949 to September 1953.

1) St. Thomas' Thought on <u>Gratia Operans</u>, <u>Theological</u> <u>Studies</u> [Woodstock, Md.] II(1941), 289-324; III(1942), 69-88, 375-402, 533-578.

2) The Concept of <u>Verbum</u> in the Writings of St. Thomas Aquinas, <u>Ibid</u>. VII(1946), 349-392; VIII(1947), 35-79, 404-444; X(1949), 3-40, 359-393.

O

Insight: Introduction

a sequence of lower contexts for the purpose of reaching an upper context; and the basic upper context is to be pre-logical, not in the sense made current by M. Lévy-Bruhl, but in the sense that developing intelligence and reasonableness are prior to intelligently grasped and reasonably affirmed utterances. Still it may not be amiss to indicate a single instance in which the genetic order of developing insights differs from the logical order of defining thought. Thus, logically it is illegitimate to speak, for example, of the equality of the spokes of a cart-wheel without explaining that the spokes will be said to be equal if the same nueber is reached in measuring each of thom. In turn, this statement calls for a further statement in which the meaning of the word, measuring, is explained; and that explanation calls for an account of units of measurement, of their standardization, of the numbers employed in measuring, and of the isosorphism of mathematical and physical relations. On the other hand, genetically it seems clear enough that Euclidean geometry existed for some centuries before there occurred any effective advertence to its metrical suppositions. More generally, it seems true that prior to every correct logical formalization there is a sufficiently univocal communication of insights, that this prior communication grounds not only non-technical discourse but also the possibility of discussing the adequacy or inadequacy of any formalization, and that from a pedagogical viewpoint the correct procedure is to begin by communicating the insights. To turn from logical to metaphysical considera-

ale alle di an tale da tale

17

INSIGHT

CHAPTER 1

G

O

ELEMENTS

In the midst of that vast and profound stirring of human minds, which we name the Benaissance, Descartes was convinced that too many people folt it beneath them to direct their offerts to apparently trifling problems. Again and again, in his <u>Regulae ad directioners inserif</u>, he reverts to this theme. Intellectual mastery of mathematics, of the departments of science, of philosophy, is the fruit of a slow and steady accumulation of little insights. Great problems are solved by being broken lown into little problems. The strokes of genius are but the outcome of a continuous habit of inquiry that grasps clearly and distinctly all that is involved in the simple things that anyone can understand.

I thought it well to begin by recalling this conviction of a famous mathematician ani philosopher, for our first task will be to attain familiarity with that is meant by insight, and the only way to achieve this end is, it seems, to attend very closely to a series of instances all of which are rather remarkable for their banality.

A Dramatic Instance

Our first illustrative instance of indicht will ٦. be the story of Archieseles rushing naked from the baths of Syracuse with the cryptic cry, "Enroka"! King Hiero, it seems, had had a votive crown fashioned by a smith of rare skill and doubtful honesty. He wished to know whether or not baser metals had been added to the gold. Archimedes was set the problem and in the bath had hit upon the solution. Veigh the crown in mater! Implicit in this directive were the principles of displacement and of specific gravity.

With those principles of hydrostatics we are not directly concorned. For our objective is an insight into insight. Archimetes had his breight by thicking about the crown: a shall have ours by thinking about Archimedes. What we have to grupp is that insight 1) comes as a release to the tension of inquiry, 2) comes suddenly and unexpectedly, 3) is a function not of outer circumstances but inner conditions, 4) pivots between the gonerate and the abstract, and 5) passes into the habitual texture of one's wind.

First, thon, insight comes as a release to the tension of inquiry. This feature is dramatized in the story by Archimedes! peculiarly uninhibited exultation. But the point I would make does not lie in this outburst of delight but in the antecedent desire and effort that it betrays. For if the typical scientist's satisfaction in success is more sedate, his earnestness in inquiry can still exceed that of Archivelus. Deep within us all, emergent when the noise of other apportites is stilled, there is a drive to icles originally published in <u>Psychiatry</u> end reprinted in <u>A Study of Interpersonal</u> Relations (edited by P. Mullaly, New York, 1949). 2 -

A profusion of instances of insight is offered by E. D. Huthinson in three ert-

O

Ο

С

O

О

know, to unlurstand, to see sky, to discover the reason, to find the cause, to explain. Just that is wanted, has many manues. In that precisely it consists, is a matter of disonte. But the fact of in uity is beyond all doubt. It can absorb a man. It can keep him for hours, day after day, year after year, is the narrow prison of his study or his laboratory. It can send him on dangerous voyages of exploration. It can withdraw him from other interests, other pursuits, other plansures, other achievements. It can fill his waking thoughts, hide from him the world of ordinary affairs, invade the very febric of his dreams. It can demand en Hess sacrifices that are mule vithout regret though there is only the hope, never a certain promise, of success. What better symbol could one find for this obscure, exigent, isperious brive, than a man, naked, running, excitedly crying, "I've got it".

Secondly, in ight comes suddenly and unexpectedly. It did not occur when Archimedes cas in the model and posture that a sculptor would select to portray "The Thinker". It came in a flash, on a trivial operation, in a moment of relaxation. Once more there is dramatized a universal aspect of insight. For it is reached, in the last analysis, not by learning rules, not by following precepts, not by studying any methodology. Discovery is a new beginning. It is the origin of new rules that supplement or even supplant the old. Genius is creative. It is genius precisely because it disregards established routines, because it originates the novelties that will be the routines of the future. Were there rules for discovery, then discoveries

G

0

O

would be more conclusions. Were there precepts for genius, then men of genius would be hacks. Indeed, what is true of discovery, also holds for the transmission of discoveries by teaching. For a teacher cannot undertake to make a pupil understand. All he can do is present the sensible elements in the issue in a suggestive order and with a proper distribution of emphasis. It is up to the pupils themselves to reach understanding, and they do so in varying measures of ease and rapidity. Some get the point before the teacher can finish his exposition. Others just manage to keep pace woth him. Others see the light only when they go over the matter by themselves. Some finally never catch on at all; for a while they follow the classes but, sooner or later, they drop by the way.

37

Thirdly, insight is a function, not of outer circumstances, but of inner conditions. Cany frequented the baths of Syracuse without cowing to grasp the principles of hydrostatics. But who bathed there without feeling the water, or without finding it hot or cold or tepid? There is, then, a strange difference between insight and sensation. Unless one is deaf, one cannot avoid hearing. Unless one is blind, one has only to open one's eyes to see. The occurrence and the content of sensation stand in some immediate correlation with outer circumstance. But with insight, internal conditions are paramount. Thus, insight depends upon native endowment and so, with fair accuracy, one can say that insight is the act that occurs frequently in the intelligent and rarely in the stupid. Again, insight depends upon a habitual orientation, upon a perpetual alertness

Elemonts

0

ever asking the little question, "Why?". Finally, inright depends on the accurate presentation of definite problems. Had Hiero not put his problem to Archimedes, had Archimedes not thought earnestly, perhaps desperately, upon it, the baths of Syracuse would have been no more famous than any others.

38

Fourthly, insight pivots between the concrete and the abstract. Archimedes' problem was concrete. He had to settle whether a particular crown was made of pure gold. Archimetes! colution was concrete. It was to weigh the crown in water. Yet if we ask what was the point to that procedure we have to have recourse to the abstract formulations of the orinciples of displacement and of specific gravity. Tith out that point, weighing the crown in sator would be mereeccentricity. Once the point is grasped, sing Hiero and his golden cross become minor nistorical details of no scientific importance. Once more the story dramatizes a universal aspect of indight. For if insights arise from concrete probless, if they reveal their value in concrete applications, none the less they possess a significance greater than their origins and a relevance sider than their original applications. Because insights arise with reference to the concrete toschors was dingrame, mathematicians invont symbols, teachers need black-boards, pupils have to perform experiments for themselves, doctors have to see their patients. trouble-shooters have to travel to the spot, people with a mechanical bent take things apart to see how they work. But because the significance and relevance of insight goes beyond any concrete problem or application, men formulate ab-

O

0

O

stract sciences with their numbers and symbols, their technical terms and formulae, their definitions, postulates, and deductions. Thus, by its very nature, insight is the mediator, the hinge, the pivot. It is insight <u>into</u> the concrete world of sense and imagination. Yet what is known by insight, what desight adds to sensible and imagined presentations, fields its adequate expression only in the abstract and recondite formulations of the sciences.

39

Fifthly, insight passes into the habitual texture of one's mind. Before Archimedes could solve his problem, he needed an instant of inspiration. But he needed no further inspiration when he went to offer the king his solution Once one has understood, one has crossed a divide. What a moment ago was an insoluble problem, now becomes incredibly simple and obvious. Moreover, it tends to remain simple and obvious. However laborious the first occurrence of an insight may be, subsequent repetitions occur almost at will. This, too, is a universal characteristic of insight and, indeed, it constitutes the possibility of learning. For we can learn incomuch as we can add insight to insight, inasmuch as the new loss not extrude the old but complements and combines with it. Inversely, inasmuch as the subject to be learnt involves the acquisition of a whole series of insights, the process of learning is marked by an initial period of darkness in which one gropes about insecurely, in which one cannot see where one is going, in which one cannot grasp what all the fuss is about; and only gradually, as one begins to catch on, does the initial darkness yield to a subsequent period of increasing light, confidence,

Ö

Elemonts

0

0

interest, absorption. Then, the infinitesimal calculus or theoretical physics or the issues of philosophy cease to be the mysterious and foggy realms they had seemed. Imperceptibly we shift from the helpless infancy of the beginner to the modest self-confidence of the advanced student. Eventually we become capable of taking over the teacher's role and complaining of the remarkable obtuseness of pupils that fail to see that, of course, is perfectly simple and obvious to those that understand.

2. As every senool+boy knows, a circle is a locus of coplanar points equidistant from a center. What every school+boy does not know is the difference between repeating that definition, as a parrot might, and uttering it intelligently. So, with a sidelong bow to Descartes' insistence on the importance of understanding very simple things, let us inquire into the genesis of the definition of the circle. The Chief 2.1 - Imagine a cart-wheel with its bulky hub, its stout spokes, its solid rim.

Ask a question. Why is it round?

Limit the question. What is wanted is the immanent ground of the roundness of the wheel. Hence a correct answer will not introduce new data such as carts, carting, transportation, or wheelvrights, or their tools. It will refer append simply to the wheel.

Consider a suggestion. The wheel is round because its spokes are equal. Clearly, that will not do. The spokes could be equal yet sink unequally into the hub and rim. Again, the rim could be flat between successive spokes.

0

il.

Elamonts

О

Still, we have a clue. Let the hub decrease to a point: let the rim and spokes thin out into lines: then, if there were an infinity of spokes and all were exactly equal, the rim would have to be perfectly round; inversely, were any of the spokes unequal, the rim could not avoid bumps or dents. Hence, we can say that the wheel necessarily is round, inasmuch as the distance from the center of the hub to the outside of the rim is always the same.

A number of observations are now in order. The foregoing brings us close enough to the definition of the circle. But our purpose is to attain insight, not into the circle, but into the act illustrated by insight into the circle.

The first observation, then, is that points and lines cannot be imagined. One can imagine an extremely small dot. But no matter how small a dot may be, still it has megnitude. To reach a point, all magnitude must vanish, and with all magnitude there vanishes the dot as well. One can imagine an extremely fine thread. But no matter how fine a thread may be, still it has breadth and depth as well as longth. Newove from the image all breadth and depth, and there vanishes all length as well.

The Concepte 2.2, The second observation is that points and lines are concepts.

Just as imagination is the playground of our desires and our fears, so conception is the play ground of our intelligence. Just as imagination can create objects never seen or heard or felt, so too conception can create

- 0

0

о

42

objects that cannot even be imagined. How? By su posing. The imagined dot has magnitude as well as position, but the geometer says, Let us suppose it has only position. The imagined ling has breadth as well as length, but the geometer says, Let us suppose it has only length.

Still, there is method in this madness. Our images and especially our dreams seem very random affairs, yet psychologists offer to explain them. Dimilarly, the supposi-tions underlying concepts may appear very fanciful, yet they too can be explained. Why did we require the hub to decrease to a point and the spokes and rim to mere lines? Because we had a clue - the equality of the spokes - and we were pushing it for all it was worth. As long as the hub had any magnitude, the spokes could sink into it unequally. As long s as the spokes had any thickness, the wheel could be flat at their ends. So we supposed a point without marnitude, d and lines without thickness to obtain a curve that would be parfectly, necessarily round.

Note, then, the properties of concepts. In the first place, they are constituted by the mere activity of supposing, thinking, considering, formulating, defining. They may or may not be more than that. But if they are more, then they are not merely concepts. And if they are no more that supposed or considered or thought about, still that is enough to constitute tham as concepts. In the second place, concepts do not occur at random: they emerge in thinking, supposing, considering, defining, formulating; and that many named activity occurs, not at random, but in conjunction

lloments

 \circ

0

with an set of insight.

The Image The third observation is that the image is neces sary for the insight.

Points and lines cannot be imagined. (But) neither can necessity or impossibility be imagined. Yet in approaching the definition of the circle, there occurred some apprehension of necessity and of impossibility. As we remarked, if all the radii are equal, the curve must be perfectly round: and if any radii are unequal, the curve cannot avoid bumps or dents.

Further, the necessity in question was not necessity in general but a necessity of roundness resulting from these equal radii. Similarly, the impossibility in question was not impossibility in the abstract but an imposs bility of roundness resulting from these unequal radii. Eliminate the image of the center, the radii, the curve, and by the same stroke there vanishes all grasp of necessary or of impossible roundness.

But it is that grasp that constitutes the insight. It is the occurrence of that grasp that makes the difference between repeating the definition of a circle, as a parrot might, and uttering it intelligently, uttering it with the ability to make up a new definition for oneself.

It follows that the image is necessary for the insight. Inversely, it follows that the insight is the act of catching on to a connection between imagined equal radii and, on the other hand, a curve that is bound to look perfectly round.

0

Elevents

0

0

The Question

2.4 The fourth observation adverts to the question There is the question as expressed in words. Why is the whoel round?

Debind the words there may be conceptual acts of meaning, such as "wheel", "round", sto.

Buhind these concepts there may be inrights in which one grasps how to use such words as "whoel", "round", etc.

But what we are trying to get at, is something different. Where does the "Why," come from? What does it reveal or represent? Already we had occasion to speak of the psychological tension that had its release in the joy of discovery. It is that tension, that drive, that desire to understand, that constitutes the primordial "Why?", Name it what you please, alertness of mind, intellectual curiosit; the spirit of inquiry, active intelligence, the drive to know. Under any name, it remains the same and is, I trust, very familiar to you.

"his primordial drive, then, is the pure question. It is prior to any insights, any concepts, any words, for insights, concepts, words, have to do with answers; and before we look for answers, we want them; such wanting is the pure question.

On the other hand, though the pure question is prior to insights, concepts, and words, it presupposes experiences and images. Just as insight is into the concrete ly given or imagined, so the pure question is about the concretely given or imagined. It is the wonder, which Aristotle

0

- 11 -

<u>onts</u>

O

claimed to be the beginning of all science and philosophy. But no one just venders. We wonder about something. 2.5 - Menesis A fifth observation distinguishes moments in the geonsis of a definition.

Then an asisal has asthing to do, it goes to sleep. Then a can has nothing to do, he may ask questions. The first moment is an avakening to one's intelligence. It is release from the dominance of biological drive and from the routinus of avaryday living. It is the effective emergence of conder, of the desire to understand.

The second moment is the hint, the suggestion, the clue. Insight has begun. We have got hold of something. There is a chance that we are on the right track. Let's sec.

The third moment is the process. Indefinition has been released from other cares. It is free to cooperate with intellectual effort, and its cooperation consists in endeavoring to run parallel to intelligent suppositions while at the same time, restraining supposition within some limits of approximation to the imaginable field.

The fourth moment is achievement. By their cooperation, by successive adjuctments, question and insight, image and concept, present a solid front. The enswer is potterned but of concepts. The image strains to approximate to the concepts. The concepts, by added conceptual determinations, can express their differences from the merely approximate image. The pivot between images and concepts is the insight. And setting the standard which insight, images, and concepts must meet is the question, the desire to know, that could have kept the process in motion

<u>Eloments</u>

О

by further queries, had its requirements act been satis-

fied. Splanatory Definition rominal and A sixth observation distinguishes different 2.67 kinds of definition. As Buelld defined a struight line as a line lying evenly between its extremes, so he might have defined a circle as a perfectly round plaue curve. As the former definition, so also the latter would serve to detersine unequivocally the proper use of the names, straight line, circle. But, in fact, Euclid's definition of the circle does more than reveal the proper use of the name, circle. It includes the affirmation that in any circle; all radii are exactly equal: and were that affirmation not included in the definition, then it would have had to be added as a postulate.

To view the same matter from a other angle, Suchid did postulate that all right angles, equal. Let us name the sum of two adjacent right angles a streight angle. Then, if all right angles are equal, necessarily all straight angles will be equal. Inversely, if all straight angles are equal, all right angles must be equal. Now if straight lines are really straight, if they never bead in any direction, must not all straight angles be equal? Could not the postulate of the equality of straight angles be included in the definition of the straight line, as the postulate of the equality of rudii is included in the definition of the circle?

At any rate, there is a difference between nominal and explanatory definitions. Nominal definitions merely tell us about the correct usage of names. Explanatory

O

0

C

definitions also include something further that, were it not included in the definition, would have to be added as a postulate.

That constitutes the difference? It is not that explanatory definitions suppose an insight while nominal definitions do not. For a language is an enormously complicated tool with an almost endlass variety of parts that admit a far greater number of significant combinations. If insight is needed to see how other tools are to be used properly and effectively, insight is similarly needed to use a language properly and effectively.

Still, this yields, I think, the answer to our question. Both nominal and explanatory definitions suppose insights. But a nominal definition supposes no more than an insight into the proper use of language. An explanatory definition, on the other hand, supposes a further insight into the objects to which language refers. The name, circle, is defined as a perfectly round plane curve, as the name, straight line, is defined as a line lying evenly between its extremes. But when one goes on to affirm that all radii in a circle are equal or that all right angles are equal, one no longer is talking derely of names. One is making assortions about the objects which names denote. 2.7 A A seventh observation adds a note on the old puzzle of printive terms.

Every definition presupposes other terms. If these can be defined, their definitions will presuppose still other terms. But one cannot regress to infinity. Hence, either definition is based on undefined terms or

0

0

else terms are defined in a circle so that each virtually defines itself.

Fortunately, we are under no necessity of accepting the argument's supposition. Definitions do not occur in a private vacuum of their own. They emerge in collidarity with experiences, images, questions, and insights. It is true enough that every definition involves several terms, but it is also true that no insight can be expressed by a single term, and it is not true that every insight presupposes previous insights.

Let us say, then, that for every bacic insight there is a circle of terms and relations, such that the terms fix the relations, the relations fix the terms, and the insight fixes both. If one grasps the necessary and sufficient conditions for the perfect roundness of this imagined plane curve, then one grasps not only the circle but also the point, the line, the circumference, the radii, the plane, and equality. All the concepts tumble out togethe because all are needed to express adequately a single insigh All are coherent, for coherence basically means that all hang together from a single insight.

Again, there can be a set of basic insights. Such is the set underlying Euclidean geometry. Because the set of insights is coherent, they generate a set of coherent definitions. Because different objects of definition are composed of similar elements, such terms as point, line, surface, angle, keep recurring in distinct definitions. Thus, Euclid begins his exposition from a set of images, a set of insights, and a set of definitions; some of his defin tions are merely nominal; some are explanatory; some are

0

0

derived, partly from nominally and partly from explanatorily defined terms. Includit Definition 2.8 7 A final observation introduces the notion of implicit definition.

D. Hilbert has worked out <u>Foundations of</u> <u>Geometry</u> that satisfy contemporary logicians. Ont of his important devices is known as implicit definition. Thus, the meaning of both point and straight line is fixed by the relation that two and only two prints determine a straight line.

In terms of the foregoing analysis, one may say that implicit definition consists in explanatory definition without nominal definition. It consists in explanatory definition, for the relation that two points determine a straight line is a postulational element such as the equality of all radii in a circle. It omits nominal definition, *Hiller's* for one cannot restrict the meaning of point to the Suclidean meaning of position without excitude. An ordered pair of numbers sectodies Hilbert's implicit definition of a point, for two such mains determine a straight line. Similarly, a first degree equation satisfies Hilbert's implicit definition of a straight line, for such an equation is determined by the ordered pairs of numbers.

The significance of implicit definition is its complete generality. The omission of nominal definitions is the omission of a restriction to the objects which, in the first instance, one happens to be thinking about. The exclusive use of explanatory or postulational elements concentrates attention upon the set of relationships in which

El er ente

С

the whole of scientific significance is contained. Higher Viewpointe 3.07 The next significant step to be taken in morking out the nature of insight is to analyze development. Single insights occur either in isolation or in related fields. In the latter case, they combine, cluster, combase, into the mastery of a subject; they ground sets of definitions, postulates, deductions; they admit applications to enormous ranges of instances. But the matter does not end there. Still further lasights arise. The short+gomings of the previous position become recognized. New definitions and postulates and levised. A new and larger field of deductions is set up. Brouler and more accurate applications become possible. Useh a complex shift in the whole structure of insights, definitions, postulates, and deductions, and applications may be referred to very briefly as the emergend of a higher viewpoint. Our question is, Just what happens? Taking our clue from Descartes! insistence on

understanding simple things, we select as our pilot instance the transition from arithmetic to elementary algebra. Moreover, to guard against possible misinterpretations, let us say that by arithmetic is meant a subject studied in grade school and that by elementary algebra is meant a subject studied in high school.

positive integers, 1, 2, 3, 4,

Lot as suppose an indefinite multitude of instances of "one". They may be anything anyone pleases, from sheep to instances of the set of counting or ordering.

0

- 17 -

Electents

C

0

Further, let us suppose as too familiar to be defined, the notions of "one", "plus", and "equals".

Then, there is an infinite series of definitions for the infinite series of positive integers, and it may be indicated symbol ically by the following:

1 +	1 =	2
2 +	1 =	3
3 +	1 ==	4
etc.,	etc.,	etc

This symbolic indication may be interpreted in any of a variety of sammers. It means one plus one equias two, or two is one more than one, or the second is the next after the first, or even the relations between classes of groups each with one, or two, or three, etc., members, as the acute reader will see, the one important element in the above series of definitions, is the etc., atc., atc.,... Without it, the positive integers cannot be defined; for they are an indefinitely great multitude; and it is only in so far as some such gesture as etc., etc., etc., is really significant, that an infinite series of definitions can occur. That, then, loss the ste., etc., mean? It means that an insight shoul have occurred. If one has had the relevant insight, if one has caught on, if one sees how the defining can go on indefinitely, no more need be said. If one has not caught ou, then the poor teacher has to labor in his apostolate of the obvious. For in defining the positive integers there is no alternative to insight.

Incidentally, it may not be amiss to recall what already has been remarked, namely, that a single insight is expressed in many concepts. In the present instance, a

- 18 -

single insight grounds an infinity of concepts.

Addition Tables. 3.2.7 A second step will consist in making somewhat more precise the familiar notion of equality. Let us say that when equals are added to equals, the results are equal; that one is equal to one; and that therefore, an infinite series of addition tubles can constructed.

The table for adding 2 is constructed by adding one to each side of the equations that define the positive integers. Thus,

From the table	2 + 1 = 3
Adding 1	2+1+1=3+1
Hence, from the table	2 + 2 = 4

In like menner the whole toble for adding 2 can be constructed. From this table, once it is constructed, there can be constructed a table for adding 3. From that table it will be possible to construct a table for adding 4. etc., etc., etc., which again means that an insight should have occurred.

Thu:, from the definitions of the positive integers and the postulate about adding equals to equals, there follows an indefinitely great feductive expansion.

The Homogeneous Expansion 3.3. A third step will be to venture into a homogeneous expansion. The familiar notion of addition is to be complemented by such further notions as multiplication, powers, subtraction, division, and roots. This development, however, is to be homogeneous and by that is meant that no change is to be involved in the notions already employed.

0

О

Thus, multiplication is to mean adding a number to itself so many times, so that five by three will

0

- 19 -

mean the addition of three five's. Similarly, powers are to mean that a number is multiplied by itself so many times, so that five to the third will mean five multiplied by five with the result multiplied again by five. On the other hand, subtraction, division, and roots will mean the inverse operations that bring one back to the starting-point.

By a few insights, that need not be indicated, it will be seen that tables for multiplication and for powers can be constructed from the addition tables. Similarly, tables for subtraction, division, and roots can be constructed from the tables for addition, multiplication and powers.

The homogeneous expension constitutes a vast extension of the initial deductive expansion. It consists in introducing new operations. Its characteristic is that the new operations involve no modification of the old.

The Keed of a Higher Viewpoint" 3.4., A fourth step will be the discovery of the need of a higher viewpoint. This arises when the inverse operations are allowed full generality; when they are not restricted to bringing one back to one's starting-point. Then, subtraction reveals the possibility of negative numbers, division reveals the possibility of fractions, roots reveal the possibility of surds. Further, there arise questions about the meaning of operations. What is multiplication when one multiplies negative numbers or fractions or surds? That is subtraction when one subtracts a negative number? etc., etc.; Indeed, even the meaning of "one" and of "equals" becomes confused, for there are recurring

0

Ο

С

decimals and it can be shown that point nine recurring is equal to out.

 Let	X	×.	0.9
then	10%	=	9.9
heace	οX	= .	9
and so	х	=	1

Formulation of the Higher Viewpoint 3.5, A fifth stop will be to for elate a higher viewpoint. Distingation 1) roles, 2) operations, and 3) numbers. Let deabers be defined implicitly by op retions, so that the result of any operation will be a surbor and any number can be the result of an operation.

Let operations be defined implicitly by rules, so that what is done in accord with rules is as operation.

The trick will be to obtain the riles that fix the operations which fix the numbers.

The emergence of the higher viewpoint is the performance of this trick. It consists in an insight that 1) arises upon the operations performed according to the old rules and 2) is expressed in the formulation of the new rules.

Let me explain. From the image of a cart-wheel we proceeded by insight to the definition of the circle. But, while the cart-wheel was imagined, the circle consists of point() and line() arithms of which can be imagined. Botween the cart-wheel and the circle there is an approximation but only an approximation. Now, the transition from arithmetic to elementary algebra is the same sort of thing. For an image of the cart-wheel one substitutes the image of

- 21 -

0

С

what may be nessed "loing arithmetic"; it is a large, dynamic, virtual image that includes writing down, adding, and multiplying, subtracting, dividing numbers in accord with the precepts of the homogeneous expansion. Not all of this image will be present at once, but any part of it can be present and, when one is on the elect, any part that happens to be relevant will pop into view. In this large and virtual image, then, there is to be grasped a new ret of rules governing operations. The new rules will not be exactly the same as the old rules. They will be more symmetrical. They will be more exact. They will be more general. In brief, they will differ from the old much as the highly exact and symmetrical circle differs from the cert-wheel.

hat are the new rules? In high school the rules for fractions whre generalized; rules for signs were introduced; rules for equations and for indices were worked out. Their effect was to refefine the notions of addition, multiplication, powers, subtraction, division, and roots; and the effect of the redefinitions of the operations was that numbers were generated, not morely by addition, but by any of the operations.

Successive Higher Viewpoints The reader familier with group theory will be aware that the definition of operations by sules and of numbers or, more generally, symbols by operations is a procodure that penetrates desuly into the nature of mathematics. But there is a further aspect to the matter, and it has to do with the gradual development by which one advances through intermediate stages from elementary to higher mathematics.

0

- 22 -

О

<u>Elements</u>

C

О

0

The logical analyst can leap from the positive integers to group theory, but one cannot learn methematics in that simple fachion. On the contrary, one had to perform, over and over, the same type of transition as occurs in advancing from arithmetic to elementary algebra.

At each state of the process there exists a set of rules that govern operations which result in numbers. To each stage there corresponds a symbolic image of doing arithmetic, doing algebra, doing calculus. In each successive image there is the potentiality of grasping by inright a higher set of rules that will govern the operations and by them elicit the numbers or symbols of the next stage. Only in so far as a man makes his slow progress up that <u>state detects</u> segulator does he become a technically competent mathematician. Without it, he may acquire a rough idea of that mathematics is about: but he will never be a master, perfectly aware of the procise meaning and the exact implications of every symbol and operation.

The degrificance of Lymbolium. 3.7 The analysis also reveals the importance of an apt symbolism.

There is no doubt that, though symbols are signs chosen by convention, still some choices are highly fruitful while others are not. It is easy enough to take the square root of 1764. It is another matter to take the square root of MDCCLXIV. The development of the calculus is easily designated in using Leibniz' symbol dy/dx, for the differential coefficient: Newton's symbol, on the other hand, can be used only in a few cases and, what is worse, it does not

- 23 -

Elements

O

0

О

suggest the theorems that can be established.

Why is this so? It is because mathematical operations are not merely the logical expansion of conceptual premises. Image and question, insight and concepts, all combine. The function of the symbolism is to supply the relevant image, and the symbolism is apt inassuch as its immanent patterns as well as the dynamic patterns of its manipulation run parallel to the rules and operations that have been grasped by insight and formulated in concepts.

The benefits of this parallelism are manifold. In the first place, the symbolicm itself takes over a notable part of the solution of problems, for the symbols, complemented by habits that have become automatic, dictate what has to be done. Thus, a mathematician will work at a problem $^{\prime}$ up to a point and then announce that the rest is more routine. In the second place, the symbolism constitutes a heuristic technique; the mathematician is not content to seek his unknowns; he names them; he assigns them symbols; he writes down in equations all their properties; he knows how many equations he will need; and when he has reached that number, now the solution is automatic. he can say that is post of the problem is just nowting. In the third place, the symbolism offers clues, hints, suggestions. Just as the definition of the circle was approached from the clue of the equality of the spokes, so generally insights do not come to us in their full stature; we begin from little hints, from suspicions, from possibilities; we try them out: if they lead nowhere, we drop them; if they promise success, we push them for all they are worth. But this can be done only if we chance upon the hints, the

- 24 -

close, the possibilities; and the effect of the apt symbolics is so relies, if not onlicely eliminate, this element of a does, does, of course, the classical example is analytic grouptry. To solve a proplet by facilities methods, one has to stable upon the correct construction. To solve a problem analytic lip, one has only to remiphate the symbols.

In the fourth place, there is the highly significant notion of invariance. An apt symbolics will endow the pattern of a methometical expression with the totality of its meaning. Whether or not one uses the Latin, Greek, or Hebrew alphabet, is a matter of an importance. The mathematical meaning of an empression resides in the distinction between constants and variables and in the share or collocations that dictate operations of combining, multiplying, summing, differentiating, integrating, and so forth. It follows that, as long as the symbolic pathern of a methomatical expression is unchanged, its mathematical meaning is enchanced. Forther, it follows that if a symbolic pattern is unchanged by any substitutions of a daterminate group, then the methematical meaning of the pattern is independent of the meaning of the substitutions.

In the fifth place, as has already been mentioned, the symbolics appropriate to any stage of mathematical development, provides the image in which may be grasped by insight the rules for the next stage.

G

О

0

4. 7 Co Car we have been asking questions that can be accounted, now can one tail whether a crown is made

of pure gold without melting it down? What accounts for a wheel being round? That is drithmetic and no does one go on to algobra? In each case, there is an appropriate image or set of images that, under the stress of inquiry, rocalts in an incight that expresses itself in some formulation called the answer.

So attention has to be directed to a quite different close. There is the question. There is the answer, But the answer consists in showing the question to be misconceived, and it is grounded in an insight that graspr why the question, as conceived, cannot be enswered.

4.1 A How big is the square root of two? Clearly, it is greater than one, for the square root of one is one: and it is less then two, for the square of two is four. It woull seem, then, that it is some improper fruction lying between one and two.

Now an improper fraction is the quotient of some positive integer divided by some other, smaller positive integer. Horeover, it is alloys possible to reduce such a fraction to its low at terms by removing all common factors. Let us suppose them, that:

$\sqrt{2} = 1/3$

where N L. () are positive integers with no common factors. Multiplying access by N and squaring, bue obtains:

0

2N = 11²

- 26 -

0

0

It follows that M must be an even number and so twice, say, P.

Substituting and dividing by two, one obtains: 2 2 2

so that N also must be an even number, which contradicts the assumption that all common factors were eliminated. It follows that there is no "rational" fraction, M/N, that is equal to the square root of two. Moreover, since any recurring decimal can be reduced to such a fraction, there is no recursing decimal equal to the square root of two. dowever, one can apply to 2, the ordinary method for turing the square root, and so it remains that the square root of two will be an infinite, non-recurring decimal. Finally, the foregoing argument can be generalized and applied to any surd. Thus, if

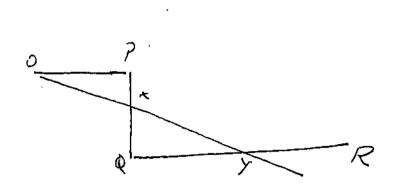
then 3 must be a factor of M, so that M can be replaced by 3P, whence, it will follow that 3 must be a factor of N.

Non-Countable Infinity 4.2, Agela, to raise another, similar question. How many points are there in a straight line one inch long? Clearly, the number must be very large, for a point is position without megnitude. But, at least, one would be inclined to say that there are twice as many points in a straight line to inches long as in a straight line one inch long. Still, that would be erromeous, as appears from the following construction. Let the straight line, PG, be perpendicular to the straight lines, OP and QR. Let 45 be twice as long as PG. And let OXY be a straight line cutting PQ in X and QR in Y.

0

- 27

O



Then, from the construction, it is clear that for every point, X, in QE, there is a corresponding, distinct point, X, in PQ. Indeed, this remains true if one produces QE to infinity in the direction of b. To satter where Y is taken on QE produced, there is always a corresponding and distinct point X in PL, Hence, there are no many points in an inch of straight line as there are in two inches, or in a foot, or in a mile, or in as many light-years as you please.

However, we have not mat the question. We have seld there are <u>as many as</u> We have not said <u>how many</u>. Accordingly, let us distinguish between the counted, the countable, and the non-countable. A set is counted then one says it contains N members, where N is some positive integer. A set is countable then it can be arranged in some determinate order that contains all its members once each and only once; for then there can be established a one-to-one correspondence between the members of the set and the positive integers. Finally, a set is non-countable when it is not possible to establish a one-to-one correspondence between its members and the positive integers.

It is to be noted that by "comtable" is not meant the possible (by of finishing the counting. Thus, an infinite series, such as

1/2, 1/4, 1/8, 1/16,

0

0

is countable, for all its numbers lie in a determinate order and so can be placed in a one-to-one correspondence with the positive integers. Again, an infinite series of infinite series of elements is countable, for all its elements can be reparted as lying within a single determinate order. Thus, the reciprocals of the <u>n</u>th powers of the prime numbers form an infinite series of infinite series. Their elements can be arranged in a column of rows, thus:

1/2	1/4	1/8	1/16
1/3	1/9	1/27	1/31
1/5	1/25	1/125	1/575
1/7	1/49	1/343	1/2401

and any column of rows can be counted in the following manner:

1	2	5	10	17
4	3	6	11	etc
9	8	7	12	etc
16	15	14	13	etc

Thus, any infinite series of infinite series can be assigned the order of a single infinite series. It follows that an infinite series of infinite series of infinite series can be arranged in a column of rows and so can be assigned the order of a single infinite series. The theorem can be repeated indefinitely. Thus, consider the rational, proper fractions:

0

0

0

1/2, 1/3, 2/3, 1/4, 3/4, 1/5, 2/5, 3/5, 4/5, 1/6, From this infinite series there can be derived an infinite series of infinite series, for one can take, first, the

0

square root of the lot, then, the cube root, then square the cube roots, then take the fourth root, then cube the fourth roots, etc...low, as has been shown, this infinite series of infinite series can be arranged in a single series. Once this is done, one can use these new terms as powers to be applied to the rational proper fractions to derive a new infinite curies of infinite series. This can be arranged in a single series, applied as powers to the rational proper fractions, yield a new infinite series of infinite series, etc., etc.;

63

From the foregoing it is clear that any infinite set is countable, provided it is possible to assign some order to its members. It is also clear that a non-countable infinite set must contain such a multitude of members in such a manner that ordering them is impossible. Such is the case with the points in a straight line. Thus, in the line, QR, it is impossible to pick any point, Q', that is nearest to U: for however short GQI may be, it contains as many points as there are in a line as long as you blease. Nor is there any use trying to proceed by dividing the line. For if this could be done in an orderly fushion, then one would be appealing to an orlared series of all the numbers greater than zero and less than unity. But the range of numbers is a non-countable infinite set, for it connot be arranged in a single order. Suppose there were some single column containing all the infinite decimals. Then consider the diagonal. It is always possible to construct another infinite decimal that differs from the first infinite decimal by the digit in the first place, from the second by the digit in the second

О

0

С

- 30 -

64

place, from the <u>n</u>th by the digit in the <u>n</u>th place. Therefore, the initial assumption is false. The column did not contain all the infinite decimals. There is, then, no single series that contains all the infinite decimals and so the infinite decimals are a non-countable infinite set.

Well, how many points are there in a straight line an inch long? There is no answer. They form a non-countable infinite pot. They do no, because they eranot be placed in a single order and to cannot be correlated in a one-toone correspondence with the positive integers. However, they can be placed in a one-to-one correspondence with other non-countable infinite sets. Thus, there are no many points in an inch as in a mile or a light-year or in as many lightyours as you places. But that does not mean that there is some determinate number of points in an inch or in a mile. Much less does it mean that some smaller number is equal to a greater number. There just is no numbering, no counting. And there is no numbering or counting because there is no possibility of offecting as order, a system, an arrangement.

Function and himit 4.3 One might think that this evclosion of number and of order blocked the mathematician. In fact, it gives him a new loase of life. That is the mathematician's contionous frontion? In the elementary case, it is a one-toone correspondence between non-countable infinite sets. Moreover, since such a correspondence can be set up between an inch and a foot, or an inch and a mile, or an inch and a

0

- 31 -

C

O

С

light-year, or any intermediate or still odder pair, sideo, visually, length is independent of the on ber of points, the mathematician can develop the infinitesical calculus. But he does so, not by finding some order in the nos-countable infinite lot, but by develoging a technique of gotting around it. This toch ique is nated proceeding to the limit.

65

Thus, equaller the emitinuous fraction, $y = \infty^2$. - Priction 19, for an or minor of 2, thore value of y. It is southingour friction, if Whithigh very of a trong lass distingto to

(once x = 1.2) of as \underline{x} increases, \underline{y} that increases are repidly, for it equals the square of \underline{x} , hence, virtually, z = 0.92moves from point to point along X, one want nove one repidly from point to point along y. Horsover, the Anteliar one advances along x, the greater must be one's striles along X. Will, there are no point omitted along \underline{x} and there are as points switted along Z.

What, the, is the ratio of the increment of y to the increment of x ? Clearly, if x increases by some slight amount, h, y will increase by

 $(x + h)^2 - x^2 = 2xh + h^2$ Hence the ratio of the corresponding increment of z to the increaset, h, of x will be (2x + h). The scaller the incremost, h, the neaver is the ratio to 2x. To the limit, it is exactly fx. Then, if the limit of the ratio of the increment in y to the increment is A is denoted by the symbol,

0

- 32 -

С

O

О

dy/dx, then Besiles the Initial Sumetion, $y = x^2$, 30 have also the derivative function, dy/dt = 2x.

Now what is this budiness of proceeding to the limit? There is read to be a limit, P, to a non-determined quantity, Q, if the difference of Q from P can be made scaller than any a robor one cares to assign. Thus, above, by saking the increment, h, scaller and scaller, one can wait the difference of (2x + h) from 21 as small as the plotte. Still, this is only the conceptual formulation of the procedure of taking a limit. What is the univerlying in ight? That is the inage that the insight presupposes?

Clearly enough the image will differ in different can s. Similarly, the insight will be reached 1. High most manners. But the poculiarity of the insight is tuck it grasps, not that something is to come point, but that something is beside the point. No matter how shall h is, there is a non-countable infinit, set of vilues battern is and (2x + h). They are non-countable break a they defy a rangement, order, system. They exhibit a non-systematic second of coolisons wartables and continuous functions. But what one is tryid, to do in mathematics, is to rach do systematic. If that is all one wants, one can divregard the consystematic. One can leap over the non-countable farinity because it is without order if one's als is to grow just what minits order. Again, the ratio of the increment of y to the increment of \underline{x} is any of a non-countable infinite set of values. But the limit of that ratio is unique. It can be detormined systematically. It portains to system.

O

0

0

- 33 -

(61)

Abstraction When our comes to think of it, we have been 4-4 1 doing this sort of thin all along. The principles of displacement and of specific gravity woold not enable Archimedos to dotermine that there was nothing but pure gold in the crosm; they would enable him to say mercaly that there was extremely little at a. Again, the definition of the circle paid no attention to the size, the weight, the strength, the origin, the materials, the purpose of the cont-wheel; on the contrury, it wont off to a realm of the non-imaginable shere points have position without magnitude and lines have length without thickness. Finally, the transition from arithmetic to algebra did not consist in puying closer attention to the things one might count by the positive integers; it consisted in deserting the good, common sense notion of adding and in developing a new notion that gave a meaning to adding negative members, multiplying fractions, and doing other things that have no origa facia meaning.

It is time, then, for us to reflect on cartain general a pacts of the process from image, through insight to conceptions, and so we had best begin a new section.

The Empirical Residue

O

0

0

5., The superclution, and conceptions resulting from indicate or only are abstract. They obstract from the irrelevant, the indication the negligible, the incutental. They concentrate upon the relevant, the significant, the important, the escential.

But that is the relevant, the significent, the important, the essential? The answer depends immediately

(68)

upon the insight, or set of insidits, grounding the supporing, considering, thinking, defining, formulating. Ultimately, one will say that the an ver depends on which in tight, or set of insights, is right, but we are not yet ready to tackle ultimate coestions. Accordingly, we have to acknowledge, for the present, that the relevant and the irrelevant, the significant and the insignificant, the important and the negligible, the essential and incleated, very with one's indicate. That at one thinks important, later, in the light of fuller insight, one will think unimportant. Inversely, that one used to think insignificant, now one may think significant; and what makes the difference is the selvent of fuller insight.

Still, even for the present, this relative pronouncement is not the whole story. For if we restrict ourselves to the insights possible in mathematics, physics, chemistry, biology, sensitive psychology, and such sciences, then there are elements or components in sensible data and in images that always are regarded as irrelevant, insignificant, negligible, incidental. Such elements or components may be named the empirical residue. They are given as a matter of fact. But they are always disregarded when one concentrates on whatever one happens to think escential.

O

О

0

On four aspects of this empirical residue, something must now be said. They are 1) the individual, 2) the continuum, 3) place and time, and 4) the actual frequency of events.

0

- 35 -

Individuality pertains to the empirical

5.1 γ Individuality pertains to the empirical residue. For whenever we understand anything, we would understand an exactly similar instance in exactly the same fashion. A different understanding would presuppose a difference in the data. It would presuppose the possibility of saying that the previous understanding would do, were it not for this aspect of the object. But, <u>ax hypothesi</u>, there is no aspect in which the second object differs from the first, and so there is no possibility of a different understanding. One may learn something new when one turns to the second object; but one automatically learns it about the first object as well.

Thus, a first motorpear off the assembly line may be understood in terms of certain principles of construction and of operation. A second motor terr, similar in all respects, c must be understood in exactly the same fashion.

Nor is the issue changed essentially when one understands instances that are unique. In this case, there is no possibility of apprehending a second object and understanding it in the same manner. But there is the possibility of apprehending the same object a second time; the data in the second apprehension will be similar to those of the first; because the data are similar, the understanding has to be the same. The fact that the similar data are of the same object does not alter the underlying principle that our knowledge is so constituted that similar data have to result in similar insights with the consequence that, what is grasped by insight, is independent of the individuality of

0

0

O

the data.

0

O

Thus, if the development of all life on this planet when comprehended in a single evolution, there would be no remainder of life on the planet to be understood in either the same or a different fachion. The object would be unique and unparalleled in our experience. Hence the less, the understanding would consist in grasping principles and laws in the combinations soliable for mattering the enermous ranges of data, while knowledge of the unique instance would consist in observing the data to be understood.

Again, what is grasped by insight, may be named an idea or form emergent in sensible presentations or imaginative representations. But it is one thing to say that grasp of such an idea or form is knowledge of individuality, and quite another to say that within our experience there is found only one instance in which the idea or form can be grasped. If grasp of the idea or form were knowledge of individuality, then the individual would be known by understanding and it would not pertain to the empirical residue. But the mere fact that in some close there is but a single, observable instance, in which the idea or form can be greeped, provides no evidence for the intrinsic intelligibility of individuality.

In brief, nothing is explained by saying that it is this instance. Invessely, in so far as we grasp explanations, we know not instances but that may or may not be found in individual instances.

- 37 -

Continuity

That deports from ordinary mathematical usage

O

5.2 / The continuum pertains to the ampirical resideo. Lot no begin with a dominition, A variable, X, will be said to be continuous in the range, $\underline{a} \leq \underline{x} \leq \underline{b}$, if the values of x is every part of the range form non-countable lifinite sets. Uset, a function, f(x), will be said to be continuous is a campo if 1) x is continuous in the range and 2) for every distinct value of a there is a corresponding distinct value of the Indetion. Finally, continuous functions possess a sumber of distinctive propyorties; hence, through the verification of these distinctive properties, it may be possible to varify the existence of continuous functions and so goaclude to the existence of continue.

Now a costinuum, in this define? and verifiable sense (which does not suppose a non-countable infinite set of observations) includes what cannot be counted because it cannot be ordered or systematized. By this inclusion of the non-systematic, a continuum electly pertains to the expirleal re idue.

Place and Time_ Place and time pertain to the empirical residue. 5.3 , Space is a continue of individual positions. Time is a continuem of an evidenal instants. No position is any other. So instant is any other. And of both there are son-countable infinite sets. But the inlividual and the costinuum both pertain to the empirical recidue. To also, they, must place and time in their basic properts.

House, when different experimenters, performing the same experiment at different places or times, obtain different results, then no one dreams of explaining the

difference in the results by the differences in the place or by the difference in the time. The appeal always is, not to the place, but to spectify in the place, and not to the time, but to cometning at the time.

Indeed, if place or time made any difference, then each place and each time would have its own physics. chemistry, and biology. For if place were relevant, the laws in one close could not be the laws in another. If time what relevant, the laws at one time could not be the laws at anothor. Farmer, since places and times are non-countable sets, there would be apa-countable sets of different physics. different chemistries, different biologies. Finally, none of the elements of these sets could be ascertained. For one cannot set up a whole physics, or a whole chemistry, or a whole biology, with the observations or experiments made at a point-instant.

0

However, it is only in their basic aspects that place and time pertain to the expirical residue. A place can be of cinqular importance, provided that importance rasts not on a more "there" but on a "something there". Such is the importance of the place occupied by a central mass in a gravitational field. Similarly, a time can be of singular importance, provided its importance rests not on a more "that" but on what happened then. Such is the importance of the initial moment in certain theories #4 the expanding universe.

5.4 1

0

C

0

Actual Frequency Actual frequency pertains to the empirical

0

• 39 -

residue.

The probability of tessing "heads" is 1/2. But in any series of actual tesses, one does not obtain a regular alternation of "heads" and teils". Between the probability and the actual frequency, there is a divergence. Moreover, this divergence is random. It cannot be reduced to any law or mitigated by any reasonable expectation. It is non-systematic. It is to be known in each case only by actual observation. It too pertains to an expirical residue.

The Significance of the Empirical Readue. 5.5, Lot us now recall as initial restriction. The empirical readue was defined as always irrelevant from the viewpoint of insights in mathematics and the orderal science. Why was this restriction imposed? (with clearly, because in such a science as the theory of knowledge the notion of the empirical readue attains a systematic significance. For in a study of knowledge one attends systematically, not only to what is concentrated upon in abstraction, but also to what is regularly abstracted from. Theory of knowledge is a higher level science that takes as its materials the whole of the knowledge in other sciencés.

Indeed, the theoretical account of the empirical residue is of considerable significance.

It is because insight "batracts from the individual that science is of the universal. It is because science is of the universal, that the observation of similarities is of such great heuristic importance.

It is because incight abstracts from the continuum

0

- 40 -

С

O

by proceeding to the limit that the infinitesimal calculus is such a unique and powerful instrument in the construction of theories.

It is because insight abstracts from place and time that principles and laws are independent of place and time and that the expression of principles and laws is invariant with respect to transformations of certain groups of coordinate systems.

It is because insight abstracts from the random divergence of the actual frequency that probability theory has its place among the instruments of scientific knowledge

O

Generally, corresponding to each aspect of the empirical relidue, there will be a remarkably powerful technique of intelligence in mastering the sultiplicity of sensible data. Unfortunately, the discovery of the techniques has to be prior to the determination of the complementary aspect of the empirical residue. For while all appets of the empirical residue are given on the level of observation, still one can grasp them as pertaining to the empirical residue only by understanding the corresponding techniques.

0

C

0

Ø

of pure gold without melting it down? What accounts for a wheel being round? What is arithmetic and how does one go on to algebra? In each case, there is an appropriate image or set of images that, under the stress of inquiry, results in an insight that expresses itself in some formulation called the answer.

Now attention has to be directed to a quite different case. There is the question. There is the answer. But the answer consists in showing the question to be misconceived, and it is grounded in an insight that grasps why the question, as conceived, cannot be answered. 4.1 <u>Surds</u>. How big is the square root of two? Clearly, it is greater than one, for the square of one is one; and it is less than two, for the square of two is four. It would seem, then, that it is some improper fraction lying between one and two.

Now an improper fraction is the quotient of some positive integer divided by some other, smaller positive integer. Moreover, it is always possible to reduce such a fraction to its lowest terms by removing all common factors. Let us suppose then, that:

where M and N are positive integers with no common factors. Multiplying across by N and squaring, one obtains:-

 $2N^2 = M^2$

C

O

It follows that M must be an even number and so twice, say, P.

Substituting and dividing by two, one obtains:

$N^2 = 2P^2$

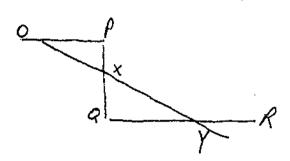
so that N also must be an even number, which contradicts the assumption that all common factors were eliminated. It follows that there is no "rational" fraction, M/N, that is equal to the square root of two. Moreover, since any recurring decimal can be reduced to such a fraction, there is no recurring decimal equal to the square root of two. However, one can apply to 2 the ordinary method for taking the square root, and so it remains that the square root of two will be an infinite, non-recurring decimal. Finally, the foregoing argument can be generalized and applied to any surd. Thus, if

$3N^2 = M^2$

then 3 must be a factor of E, so that M can be replaced by 3P, whence, it will follow that 3 must be a factor of N. 4.2 <u>Non-Countable Infinity</u>. Again, to raise another, similar question. How many points are there in a straight line one inch long? Clearly, the number must be very large, for a point is position without magnitude. But, at least, one would be inclined to say that there are twice as many points in a straight line two inches long as in a straight line one inch long. Still, that would be erroneous, as appears from the following construction. Let the straight line, PQ, be perpendicular to the straight lines, OP and QR. Let QR be twice as long as PQ and let 0XY be a straight line cutting PQ in X and QR in Y.

ര

0



Then, from the construction, it is clear that for every point, Y, in QR, there is a corresponding, distinct point, X, in PQ. Indeed, this remains true if nne produces QR to infinity in the direction of R. No matter where Y is taken on QR produced, there is always a corresponding and distinct point X in PQ. Hence, there are as many points in an inch of straight line as there are in two inches, or in a foot, or in a mile, or in as many light-years as you please.

However, we have not met the question. We have said there are <u>as many as</u>.... We have not said <u>how many</u>. Accordingly, let us distinguish between the counted, the countable, and the non-countable. A set is counted when one says it contains N members, where N is some positive integer. A set is countable when it can be arranged in some determinate order that contains all its members once each and only once; for then there can be established a one-to-one correspondence between the members of the set and the positive integers. Finally, a set is non-countable when it is not possible to establish a one-to-one correspondence between its members and the positive integers.

It is to be noted that by "countable" is not meant the possibility of finishing the counting. Thus, an infinite series, such as

C

О

1/2, 1/4, 1/8, 1/16,

۵

61

(a) the first second to be formed as a first second provide the providence of the

is countable, for all its members lie in a determinate order and so can be placed in a one-to-one correspondence with the positive integers. Again, an infinite series of infinite series of elements is countable, for all its elements can be regarded as lying within a single determinate order. Thus, the reciprocals of the <u>n</u>th powers of the prime numbers form an infinite series of infinite series. Their elements can be arranged in a column of rows, thus:

1/2	1/4	1/8	1/16	•	•	•	•	•	
1/3	1/9	1/27	1/81	•	٠	•	•	•	
1/5	1/25	1/125	1/525	•	•	•	•	•	
1/7	1/49	1/343	1/2401	•	•	•	•	•	

and any column of rows can be counted in the following manner:

1	2	5	10	17
4	3	6	11	etc
9	8	7	12	etc
16	15	14	13	etc

Thus, any infinite series of infinite series can be assigned the order of a single infinite series. It follows that an infinite series of infinite series of infinite series can be arranged in a column of rows and so can be assigned the order of a single infinite series. The theorem can be repeated indefinitely. Thus, consider the rational, proper fractions:

1/2, 1/3, 2/3, 1/4, 3/4, 1/5, 2/5, 3/5, 4/5, 1/6, From this infinite series there can be derived an infinite series of infinite series, for one can take, first, the

0

0

square root of the lot, then, the cube root, then square the oube roots, then take the fourth root, then cube the fourth roots, etc.... Now, as has been shown, this infinite series of infinite series can be arranged in a single series. Once this is done, one can use these new terms as powers to be applied to the rational proper fractions to derive a new infinite series of infinite series. This can be arranged in a single series, applied as powers to the rational proper fractions, yield a new infinite series of infinite series, etc., etc.

From the foregoing it is clear that any infinite set is countable, provided it is possible to assign some order to its members. It is also clear that a non-countable infinite set must contain such a multitude of members in such a manner that ordering them is impossible. Such is the case with the points in a straight line. Thus, in the line, QR, it is impossible to pick any point, Q', that is nearest to Q; for however short QQ' may be, it contains as many points as there are in a line as long as you please. Nor is there any use trying to proceed by dividing the line. For if this could be done in an orderly fashion, then one would be appealing to an ordered series of all the numbers greater than zero and less than unity. But the range of numbers is a non-countable infinite set, for it cannot be arranged in a single order. Suppose there were some single column containing all the infinite decimals. Then consider the diagonal. It is always possible to construct another infinite decimal that differs from the first infinite decimal by the digit in the first place, from the second by the digit in the second

С

С

place, from the <u>n</u>th by the digit in the <u>n</u>th place. Therefore, the initial assumption is false. The column did not contain all the infinite decimals. There is, then, no single series that contains all the infinite decimals and so the infinite decimals are a non-countable infinite set.

Well, how many points are there in a straight line an inch long? There is no answer. They form a non-countable infinite set. They do so, because they cannot be placed in a single order and so cannot be correlated in a one-toone correspondence with the positive integers. However, they can be placed in a one-to-one correspondence with other non-countable infinite sets. Thus, there are as many points in an inch as in a mile or in a light-year or in as many lightyears as you please. But that does not mean that there is some determinate number of points in an inch or in a mile. Much less does it mean that some smaller number is equal to a greater number. There just is no numbering, no counting. And there is no numbering or counting because there is no possibility of effecting an order, a system, an arrangement. 4.3 Function and Limit One might think that this exclusion of number and of order blocked the mathematician. In fact, it gives him a new lease of life. What is the mathematician's continuous function? In the elementary case, it is a one-toone correspondence between non-countable infinite sets. Moreover, since such a correspondence can be set up between an inch and a foot, or an inch and a mile, or an inch and a

0

О

О

light-year, or any intermediate or still odder pair, since, visually, length is independent of the number of points, the mathematician can develop the infinitesimal calculus. But he does so, not by finding some order in the non-countable infinite set, but by developing a technique of getting around it. This technique is named proceeding to the limit.

Thus, consider the continuous function, $y = x^2$. It is a function if, for every value of x, there is a corresponding value of y. It is a continuous function, by the values of x are a non-countable infinite set.

> (once x = 1/2) Now as <u>x</u> increases, <u>y</u> must increase more rapidly,

Н

О

for it equals the square of \underline{x} . Hence, visually, as one moves from point to point along \underline{x} , one must move more rapidly from point to point along \underline{y} . Moreover, the further one advances along \underline{x} , the greater must be one's strides along \underline{y} . Still, there are no points omitted along \underline{x} and there are no points omitted along \underline{y} .

What, then, is the ratio of the increment of \underline{y} to the increment of \underline{x} ? Clearly, if \underline{x} increases by some slight amount, \underline{h} , y will increase by

 $(x+h)^2 - x^2 = 2xh + h^2$ Hence the ratio of the corresponding increment of <u>y</u> to the increment, <u>h</u>, of <u>x</u> will be (2x+h). The smaller the increment, <u>h</u>, the nearer is the ratio to 2x. In the limit, it is exactly 2x. Thus, if the limit of the ratio of the increment in <u>y</u> to the increment in <u>x</u> is denoted by the symbol,

0

dy/dx, then **b**esides the initial function, $y_{\pm}x^2$, we have also the derivative function, dy/dx = 2x.

Now what is this business of proceeding to the limit? There is said to be a limit, P_{e} , to a non-determined quantity, Q, if the difference of Q from P can be made smaller than any number one cares to assign. Thus, above, by making the increment, <u>h</u>, smaller and smaller, one can make the difference of (2x + h) from 2x as small as we please. Still, this is only the conceptual formulation of the procedure of taking a limit. What is the underlying insight? What is the image that the insight presupposes?

Clearly enough the image will differ in different cases. Similarly, the insight will be reached in different manners. But the peculiarity of the insight is that it grasps, not that something is to some point, but that something is beside the point. No matter how small h is, there is a non-countable infinite set of values between 2x and (2x + h). They are non-countable because they defy arrangement, order, system. They exhibit a non-systematic aspect of continuous variables and continuous functions. But what one is trying to do in mathematics, is to reach the systematic. If that is all one wants, one can disregard the nonsystematic. One can leap over the non-countable infinity because it is without order if one's aim is to grasp just what admits order. Again, the ratio of the increment of y to the increment of x is any of a non-countable infinite set of values. But the limit of that ratio is unique. It can be determined systematically. It pertains to system.

0

O

O

0

4.4 Abstraction When one comes to think of it, we have been doing this sort of thing all along. The principles of displacement and of specific gravity would not enable Archimedes to determine that there was nothing but pure gold in the crown; they would enable him to say merely that there was extremely little else. Again, the definition of the circle paid no attention to the size, the weight, the strength, the origin, the materials, the purpose of the cert-wheel; on the contrary, it went off to a realm of the non-imaginable where points have position without magnitude and lines have length without thickness. Finally, the transition from arithmetic to algebra did not consist in paying closer attention to the things one might count by the positive integers; it consisted in deserting the good, common sense notion of adding and in developing a new notion that gave a meaning to adding negative numbers, multiplying fractions, and doing other things that have no prima facie meaning.

It is time, then, for us to reflect on certain general aspects of the process from image through insight to conceptions, and so we had best begin a new section. 5. <u>The Empirical Residue</u> The suppositions and conceptions resulting from insight commonly are abstract. They abstract from the irrelevant, the insignificant, the negligible, the incidental. They concentrate upon the relevant, the significant, the important, the essential.

G

 $^{\circ}$

С

But what is the relevant, the significant, the important, the essential? The answer depends immediately

0

upon the insight, or set of insights, grounding the supposing, considering, thinking, defining, formulating. Ultimately, one will say that the answer depends on which insight, or set of insights, is right. But we are not yet ready to tackle ultimate questions. Accordingly, we have to acknowledge, for the present, that the relevant and the irrelevant, the significant and the insignificant, the important and the negligible, the essential and incidental, vary with one's insights. What at one time, one thinks important, later, in the light of fuller insight, one will think unimportant. Inversely, what one used to think insignificant, now one makes may think significant; and what the difference is the advent of further insight.

Still, even for the present, this relative pronouncement is not the whole story. For if we restrict ourselves to the insights possible in mathematics, physics, chemistry, biology, sensitive psychology, and such sciences, then there are elements or components in sensible data and in images that always are regarded as irrelevant, insignificant, negligible, incidental. Such elements or components may be named the empirical residue. They are given as a matter of fact. But they are always disregarded when one concentrates on whatever one happens to think essential.

On four aspects of this empirical residue, something must now be said. They are 1) the individual, 2) the continuum, 3) place and time, and 4) the actual frequency of events.

0

O

С

0

5.1 <u>Individuality</u> Individuality pertains to the empirical residue. For whenever we understand anything, we would understand an exactly similar instance in exactly the same fashion. A different understanding would presuppose a difference in the data. It would presuppose the possibility of saying that the previous understanding would do, were it not for this aspect of the object. But, <u>ex hypothesi</u>, there is no aspect in which the second object differs from the first, and so there is no possibility of a different understanding. One may learn something new when one turns to the second object; but one automatically learns it about the first object as well.

Thus, a first motor car off the assembly line may be understood in terms of certain principles of construction and of operation. A second motor car, similar in all respects, cannot but be understood in exactly the same fashion.

Nor is the issue changed essentially when one understands instances that are unique. In this case, there is no possibility of apprehending a second object and understanding it in the same manner. But there is the possibility of apprehending the same object a second time; the data in the second apprehension will be similar to those of the first; because the data are similar, the understanding has to be the same. The fact that the similar data are of the same object does not alter the underlying principle that our knowledge is so constituted that similar data have to result in similar insights with the consequence that, what is grasped by insight, is independent of the individuality of

0

hypothesi,

O

C

0

the data.

О

О

О

Thus, if the development of all life on this planet were comprehended in a single evolution, there would be no remainder of life on the planet to be understood in either the same or a different fashion. The object would be unique and unparalleled in our experience. None the less, the understanding would consist in grasping principles and laws in the combinations suitable for mastering the enormous ranges of data, while knowledge of the unique instance would consist in observing the data to be understood.

Again, what is grasped by insight, may be named an idea or form emergent in sensible presentations or imaginative representations. But it is one thing to say that grasp of such an idea or form is knowledge of individuality, and quite another to say that within our experience there is found only one instance in which the idea or form can be grasped. If grasp of the idea or form were knowledge of individuality, then the individual would be known by understanding and it would not pertain to the empirical residue. But the mere fact that in some cases there is but a single, observable instance, in which the idea or form can be grasped, provides no evidence for the intrinsic intelligibility of individuality.

In brief, nothing is explained by saying that it is this instance. Inversely, in so far as we grasp explanations, we know not instances but what may or may not be found in individual instances.

0

5.2 <u>Continuity</u> The continuum pertains to the empirical residue. Let us begin with a definition that departs from ordinary mathematical usage to meet our present purpose. A variable, <u>x</u> will be said to be continuous in the range, <u>a < x < b</u>, if the values of <u>x</u> in every part of the range form non-countable infinite sets. Next, a function, f(x), will be said to be continuous in a range if 1) <u>x</u> is continuous in the range and 2) for every distinct value of <u>x</u> there is a corresponding value of the function. Finally, continuous functions possess a number of distinctive properties; hence, through the verification of these distinctive properties, it may be possible to verify the existence of continuous functions and so conelude to the existence of continue.

Now a continuum, in this defined and verifiable sense (which does not suppose a non-countable infinite set of observations) includes what cannot be counted because it cannot be ordered or systematized. By this inclusion of the non-systematic, a continuum clearly pertains to the empirical residue.

5.3 <u>Place and Time</u> Place and time pertain to the empirical residue. Space is a continuum of individual positions. Time is a continuum of individual instants. No position is any other. No instant is any other. And of both there are non-countable infinite sets. But the individual and the continuum both pertain to the empirical residue. So also, then, must place and time in their basic aspects.

0

Hence, when different experimenters, performing the same experiment at different places or times, obtain different results, then no one dreams of explaining the

 \mathbf{C}

С

difference in the results by the differences in the place or by the difference in the time. The appeal always is, not to the place, but to something in the place, and not to the time, but to something at the time.

Indeed, if place or time made any difference, then each place and each time would have its own physics, chemistry, and biology. For if place were relevant, the laws in one place could not be the laws in another. If time were relevant, the laws at one time could not be the laws at another. Further, since places and times are non-countable sets, there would be non-countable sets of different physics, different chemistries, different biologies. Finally, none of the elements of these sets could be ascertained. For one cannot set up a whole physics, or a whole chemistry, or a whole biology, with the observations or experiments made at a point-instant.

However, it is only in their basic aspects that place and time pertain to the empirical residue. A place can be of singular importance, provided that importance rests not on a mere "there" but on a "something there". Such is the importance of the place occupied by a central mass in a gravitational field. Similarly, a time can be of singular importance, provided its importance rests not on a mere "then" but on what happened then. Such is the importance of the initial moment in certain theories of the expanding universe.

О

C

О

5.4 Actual Frequency Actual frequency pertains to the empirical

0

residue.

The probability of tossing "heads" is 1/2. But in any series of actual tosses, one does not obtain a regular alternation of "heads" and "tails". Between the probability and the actual frequency, there is a divergence. Moreover, this divergence is random. It cannot be reduced to any law or mitigated by any reasonable expectation. It is non-systematic. It is to be known in each case only by actual observation. It too pertains to an empirical residue.

5.5 The Significance of the Empirical Residue

Let us now recall an initial restriction. The empirical residue was defined as always irrelevant from the viewpoint of insights in mathematics and natural sciences. Why was this restriction imposed? Quite clearly, because in such a science as the theory of knowledge the notion of the empirical residue attains a systematic significance. For in a study of knowledge one attends systematically, not only to what is concentrated upon in abstraction, but also to what is regularly abstracted from. Theory of knowledge is a higher level science that takes as its materials the whole of the knowledge in other sciences.

Indeed, the theoretical account of the empirical residue is of considerable significance.

It is because insight abstracts from the individual that science is of the universal. It is because science is of the universal, that the observation of similarities is of such great heuristic importance.

It is because insight abstracts from the continuum

0

-73

O

0

С

by proceeding to the limit that the infinitesimal calculus is such a unique and powerful instrument in the construction of theories.

It is because insight abstracts from place and time that principles and laws are independent of place and time and that the expression of principles and laws is invariant with respect to transformations of certain groups of coordinate systems.

It is because insight abstracts from the random divergence of the actual frequency that probability theory has its place among the instruments of scientific knowledge.

Generally, corresponding to each aspect of the empirical residue, there will be a remarkably powerful technique of intelligence in mastering the multiplicity of sensible data. Unfortunately, the discovery of the techniques has to be prior to the determination of the complementary aspect of the empirical residue. For while all aspects of the empirical residue are given on the level of observation, still one can grasp them as pertaining to the empirical residue only by understanding the corresponding techniques.

0

O

O

Ö

INSIGHT

CHAPTER II

HEJRISTIC STRUCTURES

, Mathematical and Decentific Inseghts.

no far our illustrations of insight have been drawn from the field of mothematics. There, have to examined the definition of the circle, the transition from arithmetic to clybra, the distinction between different kinds of infinite sets. It is true that we began from the story of Archimedes' discovery of principles of displacement and specific gravity. But then we were content meroly to indicate the more obvious features of insight and made no attempt to analyge the precise nature of the origin and development of scientific knowledge. Such an analysis must now be tackled.

Limilarities Galileo's determination of the law of falling 1.1, bodies not only is a model of scientific procedure but also offers the attraction of possessing many notable similarities to the already examined process from the image of the cartwhere to the definition of the circle.

In the first place, the inquiry was restricted to the immement intelligibility of a free fall. Just as we ruled out of consideration the purpose of cart-wheals, the naterials from which they are made, the viselwrights that make them, and the tools that wheelwrights use, so also

- 42 - 76

O

Q

O

0

C

What is happenin? Consider the algebraic procedure that we are generalizing and observe the isomorphism. Where before we said, Let \underline{x} be the required number, now we say, Let $f(x, y, z, t) \geq 0$ be the required function. Where before we noted that, while the minute hand moves over \underline{x} minutes, the hour hand moves over $\underline{x}/12$ minutes, now we work out a differential equation that expresses mathematically certain very general features of the data, such as continuity, indestructibility, incompressibility, homogeneity, and so forth. Where before we appealed to the fact that at three of clock the hour hand had a fifteen minute start on the minute hand, now we turn our attention to boundary conditions that restrict the range of functions sutisfying the differential equation.

Kestricted Invariance. 2.5, Place and time, no less than individuality and continuity, portain to the empirical residue. It follows that the function to be determined will hold independently of particular places and times for, as has been seen, particular places and times for, as has been seen, particular places and times are, in their busic aspect, continua of individual differences.

Thus, Newton's first law of motion is to the effect that a body continues in its state of rest or of uniform motion as long as no external force intervenes. This law might be regarded as a positive correlation between zero acceleration and zero force. But directly it regards constant velocities and its contention is that such velocities pertain to the empirical residue. If there is an acceleration, mechanical analysis has to assign a corres-

- 52

<u>ilearistic Structures</u>

ponding force. If there is no acceleration, then mechanical analysis does not have to bother about assigning any force. Like rest, constant velocity lies outside the range of problems envisaged by Newtonian mechanics. It is a residual feature that needs no positive explanation.

0

Indeed, there could be no positive explanation of a constant velocity. For it is mere on nge of place and mere change of time. One can account for change in velocity. and one does so by the law of force. One might account for the conservation of acquired velocity, but that would be, perhaps, a philosophic question rather than a mechanical one. But one cannot assign a positive explanation for every element in change of place for, since places are continuous, since a continuum is a non-countable infinite set of differences, there would be needed a non-countable infinite set of positive explanations for every instance of constant velocity. But a non-countable infinite set of positive explanations is impossible. Therefore, a simple explanation has to serve for the whole duration of a constant velocity. and that is provided when one explains the acceleration that terminates in the constant velocity.

However, as is clear from its premise, the point we are abaling is more general than Newton's first law of motion. The argument rests on the impossibility of a non-countable infinite set of positive explanations. If it may undergpin dectonian mechanics, it may also underpin Maxwell's theory of the electro-magnetic field. Hence, if we may use the technical formulation of the postulate

- 53 -

0

0

0

O

O

O

0

of the Special Theory of Relativity, we may conclude that the mathematical expression of the principles and lars of physics is invariant in form under transformations from one set of coordinate axes to another set moving with a relative constant velocity. (See Lindsay and Marganan, 161 f, 326 ff.). Equivalence 2.6 7 An even more general houristic anticipation

8.

can be set forth.

The empirical incomer measures and correlates the results of measurements to reach the functions that relate things directly to one mother. There follows a principle of equivalence for all observers.

For, since the function sought relates things directly to one another, the relations of things to observers are omitted. Because the relations of things to observers are omitted, the functions cannot be modified by variations in the relations between the observers and the things. Becuase there cannot be any such modification, the functions must be the same for all observers.

It is to be noted that the principle of equivalance goes far boyond mere independence of particular places and particular times. Colors as observed vary with the position, valocity, acceleration, of the observer; they vary with the intensity of the light by which he views them; they vary with the condition of his eyes, such as his need of spectacles and his possible color-blindness. But colors as explained by a series of -ave-lengths of radiation are necessarily the same for all observers; all conceive them in the same fashion; no one is handicapped by color-blindness

- 54 -

0

0

e

Now this principle of equivalance represents a property of the direct relations of things to one another. Such a property can be evologed as a precise to determine what the relations are, now can such a precise be formulated? A partial formulation is to take the origin and orientation of coordinate axes as representing the observer, and to say that functions, representing principles **MP9** laws, satisfy the principle of equivalence if they remain invariant in form under the group of continuous transformations. For if the observer moves about, he does so in some continuous fashion. But the functions representing laws are independent of any such motion of the observer. And this independence is guaranteed to them by their invariance under continuous transformations.

58

Such is the postulate of the General Theory of Relativity, which has had some confirmation, and of the Generalized Theory of Gravitation, which as yet has not been put in a form that admits an expirical test.

Certain observations are in order.

First, scalars, vectors, and generally tensors are quantities that may be defined by their transformation properties. Thus, a set of <u>n</u> quantities forms a contravariant vector if they transform according to the same rule as the differentials of the coordinates. A set of <u>n</u> quantities forms a covariant vector if they transform in an opposite manner to the differentials of the coordinates. Contravations and covariant tensors are sets of <u>n</u>² and higher orders of quantities that transform in a more complicated but analogous fashion. Hence, by expressing

- 55 -

Fatrate

9 it

Frot ute

0

O

С

physical principles and laws in covariant form, automatically there is attained invariance under the group of continuous transformations. On the tensor calculus, the reader may consult for a brief outline the second chapter of 0.C. McVittie's <u>Cosmological Theory</u>, London 1937, Methuon's Monographs on Physical Subjects.]

Secondly, invertices will be obtained only in so far as there are expressed the relations of thists to one another. As soon as equations are made more specific by appealing to observational data of any kind, there is introduced a determination from relations to observers; and then invariance is no longer to be expected. Perhaps this accounts for the fact that in the General Theory of Relativity, the somations remain invariant only as long as the coefficients, get () remain in place. See Lindsay and Margeman, p. 368.

Thirdly, the same consideration seems relevant when one attempts to understand the apparent incompatibility of General Helativity and Quantum Mechanics. As will appear presently, Quantum Mechanics is concerned with observables. It seeks formulations of things in their relations to us while General Relativity rests on the relations of things to one another, and only in its applications turns to relations to us.

Fourthly, the heuristic significance of the principle of equivilence, interpreted as a principle of covariance, is not that it restricts the field of possible laws but rather that it gives a determinate meaning to the empirical investigator's preference for the simplest laws. As A. Sinctein has advanced in his autobiography (Albert

Ŋ

0

- 56 -

<u>Heuristic Structures</u>

0

Ö

0

Einstein, Poilosopher-Scientist, ed. P.A. Schlipp, Library of Living Philosophers, 1949 and 1951, New York, Tudor Publishing Company, p. 69.),] any law could, perhaps be ex-

pressed in covariant form but within the restriction of such a form one can begin by working out the simplest laws and, if they fail, advance to the more complex.

Fifthly, of interest in this connection is Einstein's conviction that data along are insufficient to guide the constructive efforts of intelligence. There also is needed a formal principle that functions as does the negation of the possibility of a <u>perpetune sobile</u> is thereodynamics. Such a formal principle Einstein believed he had found in his postulate of invariance, first; in Special Relativity, and then; in General Relativity;. (See ibid., pp.52, 57, 69.)

2.7 7 Before we turn to the consideration of statistical lass, a summary toull seem to be in order.

After noting the similarities between mathematics and empirical insights (1.1) and the differences between them (1.2), we raised the question of the origin and nature of the clues, hints, suggestions that lead up to insight.

As a clue for insight into clues we took the solution of a simple algebraic problem (2.1) and proceeded to generalize.

What is to be known, when the insight occurs, is anticipated by the more fact of inquiry and is named the "nature of", the "such as to...", the "sort of thing

- 56 - 0

Ο

0

С

O

that....".

But similars are similarly understood. Hence, the "nature of ...", may be specified by means of a classification based on sensible similarity: and when insight occurs, this preliminary classification will yield place to a systematic account that speaks of things, not in terms of their relations to our senses, but in terms of their relations to one another. Thus, the "nature of..." is real-cod by the wore procise anticipation of an unspecified correlation to be specified, of an indeterminate function to be determined $\frac{1}{2}(2.2)$.

To functions can be determined, not only by the expirical process of reaching formulae that all known measurements satisfy, but also by appealing to ouite general considerations and arguing from them to differential equations which restrict the group of possibly relevant functions. Quite obviously, both procedures can be combined and commonly are combined to obtain a sciscors-like action that approach es a solution (both) from (2.4).

Further, when differences form a non-countable infinite set, as is the case with place and time, there cannot be a distinct explanation for each element of difference. Hence constant velocity has to be regarded as residual and, in fact, it is so regarded in Newton's first law of dotion. More generally, the mathematical expression of principles and laws has to be invariant under transformations between inertial systems in accordance with the postulate of Special Selativity (2.5).

- 57 -

0

Indeed, inasmuch as principles and laws express

C

О

С

the relations of thinks to one another and omit all reference to the relations of thinks to observe s, it follows that the mathematical expression of principles and laws must be invariant in symbolic form under continuous transformations (2.6).

Finally, one may add that these considerations supply only an abstract scheme. In concrete inquiry they are employed not singly but together. As a science develops, all that already is known serves to render more determinate and precise the general heuristic anticipations that have been outlined.

Statistical Memistic Structures 3.0 1 The Cast of inquiry is an anticipation of something to be easen by unders anding. Hitherto, only one type of such anticipation has been considered, namely, the anticipation of a correlation, a function, a law, a system. The investigator measures, plots his results upon a graph, and expects to find a smooth curve or formula that will be satisfied, not only by the measurements he has made, but also by all the relevant measurements that he or anyone else ever will make.

Now it is well to encourage investigators in th t expectation, to tell them that, if they do not discover any law then perhaps, they are measuring the wrong things, that they are not excluding some extransous influence, that if only they are dogged enough, some day someone will discover the relevant correlation, function, law.

Still, encouragement must not be carried to the point of Locaption. As we have seen, there is an empirica

O

- 58 -

residue, and the insight relevant to it consists in grasping, not the system to which it conforms, but its ultimately non-systematic charactor. Hence, with respect to an appropriate of data or measurements, the anticipation implicit in the fact of inquiry is not a single assertion but rather a disjunction. The anticipation is, not that there must be some correlation to be grasped, but that either there is such a correlation or else there is not. The positive member of the disjunction has been considered in the foregoing account of anticipations of the systematic, and now we must endeavor to clarify the meaning of anticipations of the non-systematic.

3.1 The Non-Systematic.

0

О

О

To reach a classical correlation, function, rule, law, theory, system, there is needed an initial insight into some particular case. By that insight one may master an indefinite multitude of exactly similar cases. Still such universality is not enough. The significance of the initial insight is that it can lead to further insights that master ever more dissimilar particular cases until eventually one reaches a general case and brings under one's control a definable range of particular cases. So Galilee's understanding of the free fall regarded, not bodies of some determinate size, shape, and weight falling at some fixed inclination from the vortical, but bodies of any size, anys shape, any weight, falling at any inclination from the vertical.

Now a heuristic anticipation of the non-systematic implies, not a donial of the possibility of concrete insight into particular cases, but a denial of the possibility of the abstract generalization that subsumes a range of particular cases under a general case. In other words, the non-systematic is not to be

Houristie Structures

identified with the non-intelligible. While the non-systematic excludes the generality of classical correlations, functions, rules, laws, theories, systems, it need not exclude the intelligibility to be reached by inspection and insight into particular cases.

For example, in a particular case, dice may be cast from a determinate receptacle in a determinate manner upon a determinate surface; sufficient information on the case could be attained with the help of a slow-motion film; insight could analyze the total movement into a sequence of mechanically homogeneous stages; each stage could be subsumed separately under known laws of motion, gravity, air resistance, impact, friction, and elasticity; and the total movement would be no more than the sequence of the stages. Still, dice can be cast from any sort of receptacle, in any manner whatever, upon any type of regular or invegular, fixed or moving surface. There would be no point in attempting to repeat the above laborious procedure for the infinity of particular cases; and if casting dice is a non-systematic, there exists no general case of the classical type to provide an alternative to a pointless repetition of merely particular investigations.

3.2 Actual Frequency.

О

С

Where classical generality fails, statistical generality may be sought.

Let us say, then, that there an exists an action actual frequency if, from some determinate antecedent, O, there always follows one and only one of the alternatives, P, Q, R,.... For in any <u>n</u> occurrences of the antecedent, O, the alternative, P, will occur on a determinable <u>p</u> occasions, Q on <u>g</u> occasions, R on <u>r</u> occasions, etc. Accordingly, the actual frequency of P in

0

0

 \odot

0

thes, say r, etc. Hence, the actual frequency of P to a given <u>n</u> occarrences of 0 will be <u>p/n</u>, the actual frequency of 4 will be <u>g/n</u>, the actual frequency of N will be <u>r/n</u>, etc., so that necessarily

 $n = p + q + r + \cdots$ Finally, these actual frequencies will be non-systematic if it is not possible to define an Op, Oq, Or, Pi, Qi, Bi, such that Pi always follows Op, Qi always follows Oq, Bi always follows Or, etc., so that the indeterminateness of the alternatives is eliminated.

It is to be noted that sugn a set of alternative consequents has been defined, then it is possible by combinations to construct further sets of alternatives. Thus, one can consider the actual frequency of the combination "either P or Q", or of the combination "P on a first occasion and Q on the second occasion", etc., i e'c.ii

One may add at once that the actual frequency of a number of alternatives taken together is the sum of their actual frequencies taken separately. Thus, the actual frequency of "either P or Q" will necessarily be (p + q)/n. Similarly, the actual frequency of the total set of alternatives will necessarily be n/n or unity.

A Generic Notion of Probability 3.3 1 Let us now generically define a probability as the proper fraction from which actual frequency does not diverge systematically.

The definition posits an ideal proper fraction, which it maps a probability. It admits that this ideal proper fraction will not be coincident with actual frequen-

0

- 61 -

<u>Heuristic Structures</u>

cies. It denies that the divorgance between the ideal and the actual will be systematic.

Suppose, for instance, that the probability of casting a "six" with a single die is 1/6. Then, on the first six throws, a "six" may occur twice, on a second once, on a third, not at all, etc... The actual frequency hops about in random fashion while the probability always remains the same 1/6. There is then a divergence between the actual and the ideal. But this divergence is non-systematic so that the difference between the actual and the ideal cannot be reduced to any rule or law.

Certain clurifications are in order.

First, the reason for the definition is, parhaps, obvious enough. Actual frequencies are non-systematic; they vary from case to case; and their variation is not subject to any rule or law. But a probability is an ideal fraction; it is the same for every case of a given kind; it is the representative of the universal, abstract, necessitating, systematizing tendeucles of understanding. Hence, if probability and actual fraquency coincided, then either both would be systematic or both would be non-systematic. If they diverged and the divergence were systematic, then the actual frequency would have to be the systematic resultant of the systematic probability and the systematic divergence from probability. One meets the requirements of the problem only if 1) the actual frequency is non-systenatic, 2) the probability is somehow systematic, 3) the actual frequency may diverge non-systematically from the probability, and 4) the actual frequency cannot diverge

О

0

O

O

systematically from the probability.

Secondly, it follows that the probability of a set of alternatives is the sum of the probabilities of the alternatives taken singly. For, as we have seen, the actual frequency of such a set is the sum of the actual frequencies of the members of the set (3.2) and, moreover, there cannot be a systematic divergence between actual frequency and probability. But there would be such a systematic divergence if the probability of the set were not the sum of the probabilities of the members of the set. Accordingly, one must deay the consequent and its antecedent to affirm that the probability of a set of alternatives is the set of the probabilities of the alternatives taken singly.

Thirdly, a probability is not the mathematical limit of a series of actual frequencies. For a series of terms tends to a mathematical limit inasmuch as liver/ence from that limit can be made as small as one pleases. But actual frequencies do not converge upon probability. They hop about at random. They approach the probability only to recede. Instead of converging, they diverge. But they cannot make their divergence effective, for they cannot get any system into it.

Fourthly, though a probability is not a mathematical limit, there are unobjectionable assumptions that may be introduced so that the non-systematic divergence of probability becomes virtually equivalent to the convergence characteristic of the mathematical limit. (See 4 indsay and Margenau, pp. 165 ff.)

0

+ 63 m

С

O

O

О

О

О

0

Fifthly, our procedure will be to distinguish two radically different meanings of the torm, probability. As defined, probability is an ideal proper fraction from which actual frequencies can diverge but not systematically. However, one also speaks of the probability of opinions and then one does not mean that there is some fraction relevant to the opinion. What is probability in this second sense and what is its relation to probability in the first sense, are questions that must for the moment be postponed.

Juifi Sifferences 3.4 , It is one thing to calculate the probability of throwing a "four" with a single, unbiassed die, another to make the same calculation when a pair of dice are used, and a third, to do so when the dice are "loaded". In all three cases there is the same generic element: actual frequency diverges non-systematically from the proper fraction named probability. But this genus divides into three distinct species, and the basis of the division resides in the manner in which probability is betavained.

The first species is equiprobability. Its conditions are that 1) when an antacedent,), occurs, then there occurs one and only one of a set of <u>n</u> alternatives, and 2) there is no systematic favoring of any of the <u>n</u> alternatives, From the conditions it follows that the probability of the occurrence of any given alternative will be 1/n. For ware the probability some other fraction, say, a/n, where <u>a</u> is less or greater than unity, then that alternative could not diverge systematically from <u>a/n</u> and so must suffer systematic discrimination, if <u>a</u> is less than

- 64 -

O

0

С

unity, or receive systematic favoring, if a is greater then unity.

The second species is a derivative of the first. Its conditions are that 1) when an antecedant, 0, occurs, then there occurs one end only one of a set of <u>n</u> alternatives, 2) there is a systematic favoring of some alternatives, but 3) this systematic favoring can be reduced to a case in which there is no systematic favoring.

Thus, when a pair of dice are cost, there are eleven possible results, of which some regularly occur more frequently then others. However, this favoring can be elimin ted by considering the thirty-six alternatives constituted by combining each of the six faces of one die with each of the six of the other. No one of thirty-six alternatives is favored in any systematic manner, and so the second species is reduced to the first.

റ

The second species of probability is investigated at length by applying the methematical theory of combinations. The basic formula assigns the probability, P, of <u>r</u> successes in <u>n</u> tries, when <u>p</u> is the probability of one success in one try. This formula is worked out in any suitable back as along with it the reader will find the approximations developed by Laplace, Poisson, and Gauss. The third species does not admit reduction

to the first or to the second. There is an antecedent followed by one and only one of a non-systematic set of alternatives. But one cannot mattle by inspection what the elternatives are; and their respective probabilities neither are equal nor are reducible to the case of equiprobability.

0

- 65 -

Thus, doen dice are loaded, some combinations might never occur; moreover, the occurrance of any given face of a loaded die is not equal in probability with the occurrence of any other face, for there is some systematic favoring. The third species may be described as involv-

01

O

ing a systematic element which, however, does not succeed In completely dominating the results. There is a systematic element, exhercise the alternatives reald be equiprobable. But the systematic element does not succeed in dominating the results, for they are found to be non-systematic. To cast the problem set by the third species,

the relevant technique would seem to be 1) to loosen the houristic anticipations for dealing with data that can be reduced to system and 2) to components for this loosening by introducing probabilities in place or precise predictions.

What would such loosening be? First, anticipations of the systematic are 1) that the data will satisfy some one law or function, 2) that this function will be a solution of the differential equations that represent general features of the problem. Secondly, these anticipations can be loosened. Instead of expecting one function to cover all the data, one may expect a series of eigen functions, say f_{λ} , and a corresponding series of eigenvalues, say f_{λ} . Again, instead of expecting the single function to be a solution of a differential equation, one may expect the eigenfunctions and eigenvalues to be the solutions of an operator equation, say,

$P_{y_1} = A y_1$

where P is the operator, that is, a mathematical entity

طع

0

0

С

auristic Cerustares

Ω

С

0

that changes one function into another.

What is the compensating? The foregoing yields a set of observables, the eigenvalues, A. Those that occur will possess some probability, also they would not occar: and they will not possess more than probability, else a systematic solution could work. There exists then some state function from which the probabilities can be calculated; and one may expect the eigenfunctions to lead to the determination of the state function, for if they succeed in selecting the observables with zone probability, they should be able to contribute to the determination of the respective probabilities.

Is this guess-sork? Certainly, it is not a rigid deduction. On the other hand, it is not purely arbitrary. It is the fruit of an insight based upon clues where, as is always the case, the insight takes one beyond the clues. There must be some loosening of systematic anticivations, for the data dealt with are only partially under the influence of what one sight nume a systematic component. There must be some compensation for this loos ming, else there sould be no conclusions at all. But the exact course of the loosening and the compensating is guided by insights into mathematical possibilities and, however strangely, the resulting postulates of Quantum Machinics have proved highly successful.

-an insight into Theory

О

 \mathbf{O}

3.5 Summery.

Classical method is not content with meetery of particular cases but does beyond them to the abstract generality expressed in . correlations, functions, lows, theories, systems. However, there is an empirical realduc; particular cases can consist in coincidental memifolds of dictinct hesteneou of general cases; and corresponding to such coincidental memifolds. Here is no general case of the classical type. Still this negation of systematic generality is not the weighten of all generality. For if one supposes data to be involved in the non-systematic, one cannot suppose that they diverge systematically from ideal norms.

Anong such ideal norms the most familiar is the probability of the occurrence of one of alternative possibilities; and the mode of its determination also supplies its subdivision. If there is no systematic favoring of any of the alternatives, there is equiprobability. If there is systematic favoring that can be reduced to equippobability, Newton's formula because the relevant anticipation. Finally, when there is systematic favoring that cannot be reduced to equippobability, then any special axiomatic structure has to be invoked.

There is, then, a statistical houristic structure and it complements classical structure. In any selected field of inquiry, experiments are performed, neasurements are made, and the results are tabulated. In so far as the general intelligibility of the measurements is systematic, effected procedure is relevant. In so far as the general intelligibility of the measurements is not systemathe, a probability function is to be sought. Finally, since autocodently the general intelligibility of measurements may be of the systematic or non-systematic, a general theory of measurements

0

 \circ

0

auct onvänage both alternatives. May I ask whether this requirenont, rather than particular hypotheses on the accuracy or the distorting effect of measuring, can be regarded as the ultimate basis of the imaight into operators that is effered by G. Temple in The General Frinciples of Counton Theory [Nothers's Nonographs on Physical Subjects, London 1951]?

May further suggestions be made? As long as physicists were engaged in introducing over more complex modifications of Bohr's image of the star, they more endeavoring to nount through particular cases to the general case. When they decided to limit their equations to observables (i.e., variables admitting experimental control), they surrendered not generality but systematic generality. Again, in so far as Quantum Theory may be said not to effor insight into particular cases, it suffers on that lower level a perhaps irremediable incompleteness; en the other hand, interproted as a statistical theory, it percesses fully the completeness of the non-systematic general case.

It such suggestions are to be tried out, it is not to be forgetten that our account of probability supposes an explicit advertored to insight, that other accounts do not, and that the other of accounts not only pessess the field but also penetrate the interpretation of scientific results. Only a critical and creative effort, noticulously percentating notice blogical accumptions from scientific hypotheses, can determine adequately the relevance of the present acalysis to the problems in which scientists are involved; or is the simpler words of Einstein's rather colebrated reack, the combined theorist has to attend, not to what scientists say, but to what they do.

0

(10'4

Appendix to Chapter 11.

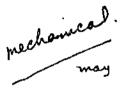
ON THE UCE OF THE TERUS "CLASHICAL" AND "STATICFICAL"

In ordinary usage, "classical" and "statistical" are not opposed. The opposite to "classical" is "quantum", AL and the opposite to "statistical" is "mechanics". This usage any be illustrated by the fourfold classification of 1) classical mechanics (Newton), ?) classical statistics (Boltzmann), 3) quantum mechanics (Schrödinger, Heisenberg), and 4) quantum statistics (Bose-Sinstein, Fermi-Dirac).

The trouble is that this fourfold classification seems incomplete. For relativity mechanics is opposed to classical mechanics and, while special relativity enters into combination with quantum mechanics (Dirac), general relativity seems as opposed to it as Einstein himself. Further, if these complications are not to be noglected, it is necessary to go behind the terminology to a systematic conception of the conceptions entertained by interpreters of physical theory. As is obvious, nowever, the purgose of this appendix is not to expound and to justify a systematic view but simply to clarify the linguistic usage that we have found convenient by contrasting its assumptions with the assumptions that seem to underlie more common modes of speech.

From our viewpoint, then, the fundamental disjunction regards the interpretation of laws of the Newton**si** ian and Einsteinian type. Such laws will be said to be interpreted concretely if they are taken to relate imaginable

0



С

Ο

О

neuristic Structures: Appendix

Θ

O

С

terms. The same laws will be said to be interpreted abstractly if they are taken to relate terms that are defined implicitly by the laws therselves. 2

05

On the first alternative of concrete interpretation, the law is completely determinate in principle. It is true enough that the law is expressed by a mathematical formula of sile generality and that further determinations will have to be added before any application to concrete instances can occur. It also is true that the further determinations cannot be deduced from the law as a mathematical or as a physical formula. But on concrete interpretation the law is not simply a physical formula; it relates imaginable terms: and because terms are imaginable inasmuch as their various dimensions are assignable, it follows that for concrete interpretation the law is fully determinate in principle.

However, those that accept the first alternative split into two groups. The first group not only affirms concrete interpretation but also affirms that concretely interpreted laws of the Newtonian type exist. The second group agrees with the first in admitting concrete interpretation but differs from it by affirming that, if any such laws seem to be verified, the verification is more macroscopic appearance. The agreement and difference of this first and this second group seem to me to correspond to the agreement that unites and the difference that separates ordinary conceptions of classical statistics and quantum mechanics.

Heuristic Structures: Appendix

0

O

С

On the second alternative of abstract interpretation, the foregoing debate is replaced by a distinction. Concretely interpreted laws of the Newtonian and Einsteinian type are resolved into abstract and concrete components. The abstract component is the verified correlation of implicitly defined correlatives. The concrete component is the schematic or nonschematic situation.

The abstract component is determinate but not fully determinate. It is determinate in its own abstract order as an element in abstract system. But it becomes fully determinate only when it is applied successfully to concrete situations. Such application calls for two further types of information: first, one must know which have in what combination are relevant to the given situation; secondly, one must know what numerical values are to be substituted for the variables and general constants of the abstract laws.

Now while there are well-known difficulties in obtaining accurate numerical values by measurement, a far more radical difficulty arises when one does not know exactly which combination of laws is relevant to a given situation, for then is unable to ge about the task of measuring in any orderly and economical manner. Fortunately, however, there do exist schematic situations in which a happy constellation of circumstances and an appropriate combination of laws have the encouraging implication that the same laws will be applied over and over again in an indefinite sequence. Such, for example, is our planetary system, which has provided the most striking instances of accurate deduction and long-term prediction.

Unfortunately, there also are non-schomatic situations. Then the task of applying abstract laws to concrete

0

Heuristic Structures: Appendix

0

O

C

situations is at the mercy of circumstance, and the relevant circumstances form a divorging and scattering series of over more numerous and more remote conditions. For example, a planetary system has a beginning and may come to an end; either event can occur only once for any given system; and then it can occur in any of a notable range of different manners.

Still the existence of non-schematic situations, so far & from blocking human intelligence, gives it a new impetus. Statistical investigation becomes the key to an account of the emergence and survival, the numbers and distribution, the differentiation and development of schematic situations. Classical anticipation of the systematic and statictical anticipation of the non-systematic cease to be disparate alternatives. They become complementary techniques in gaining insight into a universe in which the thrust of probability generates from the non-schematic ever more numerous and more developed instances of the schematic.

Accordingly, our contrast between classical and statistical rosts not on current issues but on their transposition. On the basis of cognitional analysis the opposition between determinism and indeterminism is sublated in favor of a more comprehensive structure. Classical laws are reinterpreted so that Einstein's differential equations are regarded, not as statements about events at point-instants, but as mathematical expressions of the abstractness of classical laws. Statistical laws are reinterpreted so that indeterminacy has its root in the abstractness of classical laws, its factual ground in the existence of non-schematic situations, and its significance in the type of explanation associated net with the name of Laplace but with the name of Darwin.

107

The Canons of Empirical Method

 \cap

О

observations to assemble into the conditions at some <u>nth remove</u> for some specific event.

The how - Systematic Aggregate of Diverging Series 6.53, Unfortunately, there is no system to the aggregate of concrete patterns of diverging series of conditions for all kinds of events. Full and exact knowledge of all classical laws assures only a systematic unification of the laws. Such a systematic unification is not an imaginative synthesis. On the other hand, each of the concrete patterns of diverging series is an imaginative synthesis. It follows that singly and together these concrete patterns is included in the totality of abstract laws.

റ

Not this general argument can be set forth in more concrete fashion inasmuch as the reader can be offered the materials for two insights. The first insight will be a grasp of the non-systematic in a familiar case. The second will be a grasp of the same lack of system in the aggregate of concrete patterns of diverging secies of conditions.

The familiar case may be defined by the question, How many ways are there to cast a "five" with a single die? One might attempt to answer this question empirically. One would get a high-speed camera, suitable lighting, a transport box, and proceed to take pictures. Next, one would study the pictures of all cases in which a "five" was thrown and calculate the linear and angular

- 112 -

The Canons of Empirical Method

C

O

С

momenta in such movement of the die. The more diligent one was, the greater would be the number of known distinct manners in which a "five" can be thrown. But no matter how great one's industry, one could hardly arrive at the point where one could say one knew all of the ways in which a "five" could be thrown with this die from this box on this surface. Accordingly, one would shift to an a priori method. One would work out a formula that gave the maximum and minimum initial momenta for the last stage of a throw, and the formula would contain constants that recoived different numerical values for different surfaces and different dice. From the formula one could list all the possible combinations of specifications for the last stage of throwing a "five". By introducing a convenient supposition to prevent the list from containing a noncountable inflate multitude of cases, one could proceed to the second last stage of the process; it would end in any of the manners in which the last could begin; and a further formula would enable one to assign a multitude of ways in which the second last could begin for each way in which the last could begin. With this multitude of multitudes on one's hands, one could turn to the third last stage, and so forth.

О

Now we happen to know that throwing a "five" is a non-systematic process. While each movement in the process is determinate, while the relations between successive movements are determinate, still these relations concrete commutances no fair than additathar. A control proceed under any relevant and the purpose of the preceding paragraph was, not to show that throwing a

О

Q

0

0

"five" is non-systematic, but to grasp in that instance of the non-systematic some of its distinctive characters or symptoms. Our first discovery, then, was that an empirical method of observation and analysis could reveal a great number of ways in which the result might occur, but it offered no promise of providing a couplete list of all the ways. Our second discovery was that an <u>a priori</u> method yielded an unmanageable variety of different combinations of distinct alternatives. Even though distinct stages of the process were summed up in formulae, still every possible combination of numerical values satisfying the formulae offered a different alternative, and corbinations of these alternatives defined the different ways.

Let us not turn to the second insight. Consider any event, X, and let it be defined as a determinate numerical value of some variable in some classical law. Ο

Next, consider all the laws in which this veriable occurs, and list all the alternative combinations of numerical values for the other variables in these laws when the event, X, is occurring.

Thirdly, consider the different menners in which each of the alternative combinations may be approached. Thus, if there are <u>n</u> variables involved and they may have the numerical values, <u>n</u>, <u>b</u>, <u>c</u>,..., when the event, X, is occurring, then the <u>a</u>, <u>b</u>, <u>c</u>, specify one of the alternative combinations. Now there are different combinations of rates of change in these variables, such that the rates of change are compatible and, as well, they bring the

- 114 -

The Canons of Empirical Mathod

G

O

О

and a second second

variables to the values, <u>a</u>, <u>b</u>, <u>c</u>, ... A complete list of such combinations of rates of change, first, when the rates are regular, and secondly when they are not, would serve to define the different approaches to one of the alternative combinations.

Fourthly, repeat the foregoing performance for all kinds of events. Then, one will have worked out all the manners in which one may approach at all possible combinations of rates of change all the alternative combinations of numerical values for the other relevant variables when each variable in each law assumes every possible numerical value.

Fifthly, by comparing different processes, one can draw up a list of incompatible events.

Ο

Sixthly, by combining compatible processes fin all possible manners, one can betweet diverging veries of positive conditions for all kinds of events to as many removes as one pleases.

Perhaps this is enough. One is working out a plan of setting up an unmanageable variety of different combinations of distinct alternatives. The intelligent procedure in dealing with such combinations of alternatives is to acknowledge their non-systematic character and turn to the calculation of probabilities. For an <u>a priori</u> method of probabilities. For an <u>a priori</u> the concrete patterns that occur, not only in this visible universe, but also in every possible universe subject to

would be both impracticable and inconclusive.

the same laws. On the other hand, an a posteriori method

The Cacons of Empirical Method

C

C

С

6.51 A

Such is the orgument in the general case.

154

 \mathbf{O}

Classical laws hold in the concrete only if conditions are fulfilled. To invoke the same or different laws to show that conditions will be fulfilled, marely sets up a diverging series of conditions. The further one goes back along the series, the more numerous become the conditions and the more they are dispersed not only in space but also in time. Even if one knew the patterns of the diverging series, and the fulfilment of all conditions at some <u>a</u>th remove, the only possible deduction would be in virtue of the inverse, converging series. Finally, such patterns form a non-systematic aggregate; they are an enormous sories of different combinations of distinct alternatives; their intelligibility is reached, not by working them out in detail, but by acknowledging their nonsystematic character and turning to probabilities.

The Possibility of Accurate Prediction 6.55 However, bosides the Poregolag general case, there is also a manye of particular cases. In the last analysis, they reduce to the general case. But the last analysis is not reached at once and, in the meantime, there is the possibility of the accurate deduction and prediction of fully determinate events. Accordingly, we have to define the particular case, show how it escapes the logic of the diverging series of conditions, and finally argue that this escape is never complete.

The particular case will be named a scheme. Its abstract or preservical component is some classical law or combination of laws, such that there arises a

- 116 -

The Canons of Empirical Method

O

0

С

mutual fulfilment of conditions. Its concrete or factual component is such a conjunction of things or events that, in virtue of the law or laws, the conjunction leads to another, the other leads to a third, the third leads to a fourth, until eventually the initial conjunction recurs. Such schemes may be extremely simple or extremely complex. They may involve any number of intermediaries or, in the case of the straight-forward continuity, none at all. Moreover, schemes may be combined, so that all will function if any one or two or <u>n</u> function. Finally, schemes may emerge in a conditioned series, such that the later become possible then the earlier are functioning.

The conspicious example of the schemes of recurrence is of course the planetary system. But the whole of nature spens full of oscillations, rythma, alternations, recurrences, from the elementary processes of physics to the technological, economic, and political inventions and routines of man.Finally, when such patterns of recurrent activity are submitted to analysis, they are found to involve the two elements of a scheme, the theoretical component of intergrelated laws and the factual compendent of a conjunction that through the laws brings forth its own recurrence. 0

Clearly, such schemes do not suppress the principle that no ovent is unconditioned. Nor do they prevent such event from having many conditions. None the loss, though the diverging series of conditions recains, it has been brought to heel. For the scheme itself takes care of its positive conditions, all of which are included

- 117 -

The Canons of Empirical Method

O

O

0

within classes of events, and every event within the classes keeps recurring because the others do in a perpetual vicious circle.

ISE

O

There is, then, an escape from the unpredictability implicit in the diverging series of conditions. Were astronomous merely in possession of full and exact knowledge of all natural laws, they still would be stuck with their 3-body problem, that is, with the task of finding a general solution to the problem of determining the trujectories of three bodies then their initial positions and momenta were given. In fact, astronomous operate in the light of an imaginative synthesis; Ptolemy's mistaken imaginative synthesis vielded fair results; Copercious' simpler imaginative synthesis combined with a more accurate knowledge of laws enables men to predict with remarkable accuracy the movements, not merely of three bodies, but of the sun, the planets, their satellites, the comets, and even asteroids.

Lill, this ascape is not complete. The periodicity of our planetary system offers no guarantee against internal disruption of its members or against the intrusion of some external body like a bull into our china shop. The planetary system secures its own perpetuity only if certain negative conditions are fulfilled, and over those negative conditions it exercises no control. Moreover, just as the planetary system is not a proof of its own survival, so it is not the ground of its own emergence. A scheme is a matter, not merely of a combination of laws, but also of a happy conjunction of things or events. That

118

The Canous of Depirical Method

0

0

O

conjunction has to take place before the scheme can begin to function, and so the scheme has its origin is a combination which it did not generate.

151

O

Now one might like to suppose that, just as there are schemes, so too there is an over-all scheme, an ultimate imaginative synthesis, on which there could be based accurate predictions of the emergence and survival. of lesser schemes. Such would be the affirmation of mechanist determinism. But, as we have seen, complete and exact knowledge of all laws would include a systematic unification of laws without involving an imaginative synthesis either of the concrete wifolding of this usiverse or of any other subject to the same laws. Moreover, an over-all scheme would have not only a theoretical component, constituted by laws in combination, but also a factual component, constituted by an iditial conjunction that the over-all coheme itself could not bring about. Finally, the issue before us is to be settled, not by what one might like to think, but by the evidence; and the evidence is that the concrete, historical unfolding of this world process involves a conspicuous use of the statistical techniques of large numbers and long intervals of time. It seems to follow that the over-all intelligibility of our world process is, not in accord with the assumptions of mochanist determinism, but, in accord with some different view that assigns a due place to statistical laws. After all, machines are constructed and function within political, economic and technological schemes,

- 119 -

The Canons of Empirical Method

0

0

О

SUCH and rick schemes emerge, survive, and are superseded without systematic divergence from the probabilities.

The Indeterminacy of the Abstract. 6.56 We have been endeavoring to indicate in precise terms both the indeterminacy of the abstract and the consequent statistical residues.

In brief, the indeterminacy of the abstract is the indeterminacy of the blanket provise, "other things being equal". Classical laws are said to hold in the concrete, provided other things are equal, but no one specifies what the other things are or in what their equality consists.

There is good reason for this omission. For a fully determinate event in the general case depends upon the fulfilment of a diverging series of positive and negative conditions. The conditions at each remove in the series not only become more numerous but also scatter in space and time. Finally, the patterns of such diverging series form an enormous, non-systematic aggregate.

It is true that there are schemes of recurrence. Granted any of a long series of suitable initial conjunctions, the operation of classical laws will tend to repeat the initial conjunction indefinitely. Still, there is only a tendency and not an absolute necessity, # for here too there rules the blanket provise, other things or magnet but negligibly as. being equal, Nor is there any evidence to support the affirmation of some over-all scheme to regularize the emergence and the survival of lesser schemes.

The general case, then, is the universal

0

- 120 -

0

0

case. In the last analysis, events depend upon a nonsystematic aggregate of patterns of diverging series of conditions. Because that aggregate is non-systematic, it is a residue abstracted from by the totality of classical laws. Because the non-systematic is the premise of statistical inquiry, this residue may be named statistical. Hence, the conon of statistical residues may be said to affirm the non-systematic character of the aggregate of patterns of diverging series of conditions that govern concrete events.

A Mathematical Analogy 6.57 A mathematical analogy may exist. For combinations of differential equations are likely to be soluble only through the introduction of special suppositions and, even then, only by a sethod of approximations. Hence, if one said that classical laws corresponded to differential equations, that concrete problems demanded factor combinations of such equations, and that the totality of special suppositions and approximate solutions was nonsystematic, one would have in the field of mathematics an analogy to the canon of statistical residues.

0

The General Character of Statistical Theories 6.6 J Finally, the canon of statistical residues, in conjunction with the other canons of empirical method, makes it possible to complement our account of the notion of probability (Chapter 11, 4) with a derivation of the general characteristics of statistical theories.

6.61 First, stutistical theories will deal

- 121 -

4.1

The Elementary Paradox

6

Let $(\underline{x_1}, \underline{t_1})$ and $(\underline{x_2}, \underline{t_2})$ be the coordinates of a pair of point-instants, P and Q, in a reference frame, K. Let $(\underline{x_1}, \underline{t_1})$ and $(\underline{x_2}, \underline{t_2})$ be the coordinates

of the same of point-instants in a relatively moving frame, K', and let them from this view-point be named, P' and Q'.

On the Lorentz-Einstein transformation, writing

$$H = 1/(1 - u^2/c^2)^{\frac{1}{2}}$$

one relates the coordinates by the equations

$$\underline{x^{*}}_{1} = \underline{H}(\underline{x}_{1} - \underline{ut}_{1})$$
 (1)

$$x'_2 = H(x_2 - ut_2)$$
 (2)

$$\underline{t'}_1 = \underline{H}(\underline{t}_1 - \underline{u}\underline{x}_1/\underline{c}^2)$$
 (3)

$$t'_2 = H(t_2 - ux_2/c^2)$$
 (4)

Now consider two particular cases. So far, P and Q are any point-instants whatever: but in our first particular case we suppose that P and Q are the simultaneous positions of the ends of a standard measuring rod in the frame, K. Since the length of the rod is unity, and since the positions are simultaneous, we have

$$\frac{x_1 - x_2}{x_1 - x_2} = 1$$
 (5)

$$\frac{t_1}{1} - \frac{t_2}{2} = 0$$
 (6)

(7)

(8)

By subtracting equation (2) from (1) and equation (4) from (3) and substituting the values from equations (5) and (6), we have

 $\frac{x^{\prime}1 - x^{\prime}2}{t^{\prime}1 - t^{\prime}2} = \frac{H}{Hu/c^{2}}$

0

О

О

so that, clearly, a unit length between simultaneous positions becomes on transformation a length that is not unity between positions that are not simultaneous.

In our second particular case, we suppose that P and Q are the point-instants of successive seconds in a standard clock stationary relative to the frame K. Clearly,

$$\frac{x_1}{1} - \frac{x_2}{2} = 0$$
 (9)
t₁ - t₂ = 1 (10)

whence, as before, by appealing to equations (1) to (4) and by substituting from (9) and (10), one obtains,

$$\underline{x'}_1 - \underline{x'}_2 = -\underline{H}_2 \qquad (11)$$

$$\mathbf{t'_1} - \mathbf{t'_2} = \underline{\mathbf{l}} \tag{12}$$

0

so that a distance that is zero has been transformed into a distance that is not zero, and a time that is unity has been transformed into a time that is not unity.

Etill, though distances and times are relative to reference frames, the four-dimensional interval is invariant. Let us name the interval, s, where

$$ds^2 = dx^2 - c^2 dt^2 \qquad (13)$$

and in the present cases

С

K'

0

$$\underline{s}^{2} = (\underline{x}_{1} - \underline{x}_{2})^{2} - \underline{c}^{2}(\underline{t}_{1} - \underline{t}_{2})^{2} \quad (14)$$

0

On substituting from equations (5) and (6), one finds that the interval of the rod in K according to the account in K is unity. Likewise, on substituting from equations (7) and (8), one finds that the interval of the rod in K according to the account in \mathbb{K}^1 is unity. Again, on substituting from equations (9) and (10), one finds that the interval of the interval of the clock in K

Space and Time

O

0

according to the account in K is <u>ic</u> $\begin{bmatrix} 1 \\ -7 \end{bmatrix}$. Likewise on substituting from equations (11) and (12), one finds that the interval of the clock in K according to the account in K[†] is also <u>ic</u>.

Thus we have arrived both at the elementary paradox and at its solution. The elementary paradox arises from the contrast of equations (5) and (7) and again from the contrast of equations (10) and (12). The first contrast shows that the length of a rod in K is unity on the account in K but on the account in K' is greater than unity; and if K' finds a unit rod greater than unity, it seems to follow that his own rod is shorter. The second contrast shows that the length of a standard duration in K is unity in the account in K but is greater than unity in the account in K'; and if a unit of duration in K is found to be greater than unity in K', it seems to follow that the unit in K' must be shorter.

O

However, if we began from rods and clocks in the system, K', we could establish the opposite conclusions with equal validity; for then it would seem to follow that the shorter units were in the system, K. Such is the elementary paradox.

What the paradox overlooks is the fact that, in the context of Special Belativity, one is not dealing with rods that are merely spatial or with clocks that are merely temporal. For, as has been seen, a standard rod determines an invariant four-dimensional interval of magnitude, unity: and a standard clock determines an invariant four-dimensional interval of magnitude, ic. Rods that determine an invariant four-

- 225 -

Space and Time

С

С

dimensional interval must have a temporal component, and clocks that determine an inversant four-dimensional interval must have a spatial component.

Indeed, as appears from equations (5) and (6), in the reference frame, in which a rod lies between simultaneous point-instants, the invariant interval has a spatial component of magnitude, unity, and a temporal component of magnitude, zero. As appears from equations (7) and (8), in other relatively moving reference frames, the same rod determines the same four-dimensional interval, which, however, now has a contral component of magnitude, H, and a temporal component of magnitude, $-Hu/c^2$. Concomitant with the variation of the spatial components, there is a variation of the temporal components. The rod in K by the account in K lies between simultaneous point-instants. The same rod in K by the account in K! lies between non-simultaneous point-instants. The spatial and temporal components, say [1, 0], transform to spatial and temporal components, $[H, -Hu/c^2]$. Inversely, the rod in K' by the account in K' will lie between sigultaneous point-instants. But the same rod in K! by the account in K will lie between non-simultaneous point-instants. In this case, spatial and temporal components, $\int 1, 0 \int$, transform to spatial and temporal components, $[H, Hu/c^2]$, for the sign of the relative velocity, y, changes.

Ο

Again, as appears from equations (9) and (10), in the reference frame, in which the beginning and the end of a standard duration occur in relatively the same position, the invariant interval of magnitude, <u>ic</u>, has a spatial com-

0

C

Ο

С

ponent of magnitude, zero, and a temporal component of magnitude, unity. As appears from equations (11) and (12), in other relatively moving frames of reference, the same duration determines the same invariant interval, which, however, now has a spatial component of magnitude, -Hu, and a temporal component of magnitude, <u>H</u>. Again, there is concomitant variation of spatial and temporal components. A standard duration in K by the account in K has components $\begin{bmatrix} 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix}$; the same duration in K by the account in K' has components $\begin{bmatrix} -Hu, H \end{bmatrix}$. Inversaly, a standard duration in K' by the account in K' will have components $\begin{bmatrix} 0, 1 \end{bmatrix}$; but this duration in K' by the account in K will have components $\begin{bmatrix} Hu, H \end{bmatrix}$.

۵

0

The elementary paradox results from a comulation of oversights. It disregards the invariant interval fixed by any rod for all reference frames and the invariant interval fixed by any clock for all reference frames. It disregards four accounts of two rods to consider only two rods, and it disregards four accounts of two clocks to consider only two clocks. Finally, it disregards the temporal component that pertains to rods and the spatial component that pertains to clocks.

Still, if the elementary paradox is to be set aside as a gross over-simplification, there remains in its entirety the problem of working out a coherent account of the notion of measurement compatible with the complexity of Special Belativity. To this task we must now address our attention.

- 227 -

O

О

С

are invariant under permissible transformations, and so measurements valid in one reference frame are valid in all permissible frames.

On the suppositions of the Special Theory of Relativity, some revision is necessary. We shall consider how it affects 1) lengths of standard units, 2) lengths of measurable objects, 3) measurements, and 4) sizes.

First, a length results from fitting a size into a geometrical construction. On the Special Theory of Selativity, the velocit geometry is that of Minkowski space. The following characteristics of the lengths of standard units follow from the properties of this space or, what comes to the same thing, from the Lorentz-Einstein transformation.

1. In all inertial frames of reference a standard rod determines a four-dimensional interval of magnitude, unity. Similarly, in all inertial frames of reference a standard clock determines a four-dimensional interval of magnitude, <u>ic</u>, where <u>i</u> is the square root of minus one, and <u>c</u> is the velocity of light in <u>vacuo</u>.

2. A reference frame will be said to be normal to a standard rod, when the rod in the frame determines an interval with spatial component of magnitude, unity, and with temporal component of magnitude, zero.

Similarly, a reference frame will be said to be normal to a scandard clock, when the clock in the frame determines an interval with a spatial component of magnitude, zero, and a temporal component of magnitude, unity.

3. Reference frames that are not normal to standard rods or standard clocks are in relative motion to

- 235 -

0

O

O

0

С

normal reference frames.

Inversely, in reference frames in relative motion to normal frames, standard rods determine the same invariant interval but now possess spatial components, \underline{H} , and temporal components, $-\underline{H}u/c^2$ or $\underline{H}u/c^2$, according to the direction of the relative motion.

Similarly, in refevence frames in relative motion to normal frames, standard clocks determine the same invariant interval, which, however, now possesses a spatial component, -Hu or Hu, and a temporal component, <u>H</u>.

Secondly, there are to be determined the characteristics of the lengths of other measurable objects. Clearly, these lengths will have the same properties as the lengths of standard units. For both sets of lengths are subject to the same transformation equations.

0

Accordingly, for every measurable spatial object there is a group of normal reference frames, rolatively at rest, and in them the object determines an interval with spatial component, \underline{A} , and with temporal component, zero. In other reference frames in relative motion, the same object will determine an interval of the same magnitude but with spatial component, \underline{A} , and with temporal component, $-\underline{A}$, \underline{A} , \underline{A} , \underline{A} , and with temporal component, $-\underline{A}$, \underline{A} , \underline{A} , \underline{A} , \underline{A} , \underline{A} , and with temporal component, $-\underline{A}$, \underline{A}

object, there is a group of normal reference frames, relatively at rest, and in them the object determines an interval with spatial component, zero, and with temporal component, B. In other inertial frames in relative motion, the same object

23/

n

0

0

0

will determine the same invariant interval, namely <u>icB</u>, but with a spatial component, -BHu or BHu, and with a temporal component, BH.

In the third place, measurements are to be considered, and they offer two distinct aspects.

For, in so far as measurements are numbers to be substituted into equations or to be derived by solving equations, they are identical with lengths. This follows from the nature of the coordinate system which, in the present case, deals only with measured lengths. Accordingly, all that has been said about lengths may now be repeated about measurements. A spatial magnitude will determine an invariant interval, A, with components, $\begin{bmatrix} AH, & -AHu/c^2 \end{bmatrix}$, and a temporal magnitude will determine an invariant interval, $\begin{bmatrix} BH, & -BHu \end{bmatrix}$. In normal reference frames, <u>H</u> becomes unity, and <u>u</u> becomes zero, so that the components are $\begin{bmatrix} A, & 0 \end{bmatrix}$ and $\begin{bmatrix} 0, & 0 \end{bmatrix}$ respectively. Finally, in transformations to the left, the sign of <u>u</u> changes.

0

However, there is a further aspect to measurements. The numbers substituted into equations have to be derived from data, and the numbers derived from equations have to be verified in data. Thus, there arises the question whether Special Belativity modifies the concrete operation of measuring.

The general answer would seem to be that it does not. A measurement remains the number that stands to unity as the measurable object stands to a standard unit. However, within the frame-work of that general answer it will be well to advert to particular cases.

- 237 -

G

O

0

Ordinarily, simultaneity is determined in the name manner in selecting the point-instants at the ends of the standard unit and in selecting those at the ends of the measurable of jort. It will follow that spatial measurements ordinably occur with the standard unit and the measurable object in the same reference frame and, since A: 1 : : AH : H, the result of measuring will be the number, A.

Still, this is not inevitable. Further, it may be fairly common to use a clock, stationary in a reference frame, to time a process that begins at one place in the frame and ends at another. Hence, besides the measurements that result when the object and the standard are taken in the same frame, namely, A/1, AH/H, B/1, BH/H, there are the measurements that result then they are in different frames. If one of these frames is normal, the results will be AH/1, A/H, EH/1, B/H: if noither frame is normal, one must distingaish two values of H, say H^1 and H^0 , so that the results may be AH^1/H^0 , AH^0/H^1 , BH^0/H^0 . In other words, the actual process of measuring can involve the same ambiguities as are contained in the elementary paradox and, indeed, over more elaborate ambiguities.

0

Accordingly, we are brought to the conclusion that, while Special Selativity demands an operation of measuring that fundamentally is similar to measuring under Newtonian assurptions, still it adds new rules that either eliminate or correct some results which, on Newtonian assumptions, would be valid.

238

228

Chapter V: Space and Time. §4. Rods and Clocks. Foot-note to p. 239. 277

0

The quections should be clarified. "Size" has been defined as an experiential conjugate that varies both from inner change in the object and from change of position of the observer. In the text I do not mean to deny perspectival variation of size. Similarly, I do not mean either to affirm of or to deny what I regard as meaningless, namely, that there is or is not an inner change of the object as referred to some absolute space. The question is whether an acceptance of special relativity logically entails any change in rods or clocks, and my answer is that no such change can be deduced. "Lengths" vary because reference frames vary; and reference frames vary because modes of determining simultaneity vary.

Space and Time

O

О

C

In the fourth place, there are the sizes of opatial and of temporal magnitudes. Do rods contract or expand? Do A Foot note on clocks run slow or fast? Our answer will be nogative, and previous shut, our reasons run as follows:

> First, it is difficult to suppose that rods and clocks should undergo such variation althout a proportionate variation occurring in the objects that they measure: and if the proportionate variation occurs, then no explanation is provided for the relativity of lengths to reference fromes.

Eccordly, even if reds and clocks varied while other sizes do not vary, the required explanation would not be forthcoming. For rods and clocks and other sizes determine intervals that are invariant for all inartial reference fraces. Moreover, these intervals exhibit temporal components for rods and other spatial magnitudes; and they exhibit spatial components for clocks and other temporal magnitudes. How does a contracting rod generate a temporal component? How does a decolorated clock generate a spatial component?

0

Thirdly, the evidance for contracting rods and decalarated clocks lies in the elementary paradox. Now so have no doubt that, on the surgestations of Special Folativity, it would be roughly to reach such measurements as A/H, AH/1, B/H, BH/1, which are the lengthered and shortened rods and the faster and slower clocks. But the obvious explanation lies, not in any variation of the sizes of rods or clocks, but in the relativity of lengths and in the use of a standard unit in one reference frame to measure an object in another, significantly different, frame.

- 239 -

C

0

С

Fourthly, there is no aspect of the Special Theory of Relativity that is not accounted for by distinguishing between size and heasth, where length is constructed in accord with the geometry of Minkowski space. There follor immediately both the invariant intervals and the relativity of special and temporal components to reference frames. Moreover, this construction of length prescopeses, not a variation in size, but a relatively of simultaneity. It has from a relative solution to the problem of synchronization that "possible such a shorever such a solution is adopted, Special Belativity will follow even though no variation in size is additted.

Ø

the point is worth illustrating. Suppose two planes flying in the case direction with the same constant velocity, so that the distance between them is constant, Let that distance be regarded as the standard unit, and suppose two observers, K and K', that determine simultaneity differently, how consider the instant at which the first plane is at a point, P. Let us say that for & the second plane at the same instant is at some point, ... Then for K', since he determines simultaneity differently, the second plane must be at some nearer or further point, 5, at the instant when the first plane is at P. Accordingly, though there is only one size, though this size is constant, though both observers agree that there is only one size and that it is constant, none the loss, in virtue of different determinations of simultaneity, there are two lengths, PE and PS, and they are unequal with an inequality is note proportion to the relative velocities of the

- 240 -

0

С

0

planes and the divergence between the two determinations of simultaneity.

While this illustration is, I believe, to the point, still it is only an illustration. One cannot take a relativity of simultaneity as postulate and from it deduce the Special Theory of Belativity. On the contrary, a relativity of simultaneity morely sets a problem: confronted with that problem, one adverts to the invariance of principles and laws: and it is by postulating the invariance of principles and laws under inertial transformations that one reaches the basic premise from which Special Belativity follows.

- 241 -

0

O

Space and Time

O

С

4.4

<u>Sucmary</u>

The air has been to work out a general theory of measurement and there by clarify the potions of measurable object, standard unit, measuring, and measurement peculiar to Special Bolativity.

Ø

0

280

Measurement was seen to be the technique by which the scientist moves from the description of things as related to our senses to the explanation of things as related to one another.

Standard units were conceived as measurable objects that intrinsically stand on the same footing as other measurable objects but conventionally are given a unique status to simplify and systematize the formulation of the relations of things to one another.

The definitions of measurable objects of various kinds, the standardization of their respective units, the rules of measuring, and the nature of measurment were seen to depend on abstract presumptions and laws and, therefore, to be subject to revision along with revisions of the presumptions and the laws.

This generic notion of measurement was then applied to measurements of spatial and temporal megnitudes.

A basic distinction was drawn between the experiential conjugate, size, and the pure conjugate, length. The former is correlative to our experience. The latter is implicit in a geometrical structure of definitions, postulates, and inferences.

0

- 242 -

О

0

0

The transition from Newtonian to Einsteinian physics is a transition from Longth, as implicit in Euclidean geometry, to length, as implicit in Minkowski space. It drops lovariant spitial and temporal lengths. It introduces invariant four-dimensional intervals with variable spatial and tomporal components. While it grants no spucial significauce to reference fraces at rest, still it does imply a position of privilage for sormal reference frames, is which spatial magnitudes have a zero tomporal component and terporal magnitudes have a zero spatial component. Thus, an interval, A, which is a real number, has the components $\left[AH,-AHu/c^2\right]$ which become $\left[A,0\right]$ in a normal reference frame; and an interval, icB, which is an imaginary number, has the components [-BHu, BH], which become [0, B] in a normal reference frame. It is to be noted that the distinction between the spatial and the temporal is as sharp as the distinction between real and imaginary numbers, that the lengths of standard units are but particular cases of the longths of other measurable objects, that the transformation properties of unit and of other lengths are the same, that in a kinkowski manifold lengths are already measured so that measurements are coincident with lengths, that in the operation of measuring, there arise in Special Belativity ambigaities that do not exist and so do not have to be solved on Newtonian suppositions.

0

However, while Special Relativity involves a revision of the notions of lengths and of measurements and while it introduces a new caution in the operation of measuring,

0

- 243 -

it does not imply the expansion or contraction of rode or the acceleration or deceleration of clocks. In other words, the unit divisions of the axes in the coordinate systems are constituted, not by the size, but by the length of standard distances and standard durations. Such lengths are relative to reference frames, but this relativity of length arises, not from these of size, but from the inter-dependence of determinations of length and of simultaneity. That corresponds to change of size is, not a mere transformation of reference frames, but a variation in the intervals, A or <u>ic</u>B. A variation in some measurable objects; a proportionate variation is all of these intervals success that the standardization of units needs to be corrected and revised.

0

181

0

Might I suggest that, on this showing, there vanishes the arbitrary division of the world of physics into rods and clocks and, on the other hand, all other objects? Such arbitrariness is noted and regretted by Prof. Einstein in his Autobiography. (Albert Linstein, Philosopher-Scientist, ed. P.A.Schlipp, The Library of Living Philosophers, New York, 1949 and 1951, p. 59)

It would soom to vanish 1) inasmuch as physics is set the task of assigning invariantly expressed abstract relations to account not only for experienced colors and sounds but equally for experienced extensions and durations, 2) inasmuch as these relations are reached by formulating and verifying hypotheses, 3) inasmuch as notions of length and

- 244 -

0

Q

О

С

measurement and the standardization of units form internal parts of the hypothesis to be verified, 4) innumuch as the hypothesis assigns the same properties to lengths of standard units as to lengths of other measurable objects, and 5) inasmuch as frances of reference have their units constituted, not by the sizes of rods and clocks, but by their theoretically defined lengths.

0

283

0

Finally, it would seem that the forecoing account of rods and clocks in Special Relativity might easily be adapted to the requirements of General Estativity. In General Relativity there remains the invariant four-dimensional interval: there remain its spatial and its temporal components; there remains the covariance of these components in different reference frames. The basic differences are that the components now are curvilinear and that specifications of coordinates are not virtual measurements of distance or duration.

On the other hand, it is not to be claimed that our account of measuring is completely general. Rather that distinction seems to pertain to Quantum Theory viewed as a theory of measurements. For if it is true that all measuring is abstractive both in the sense that it replaces sets of data by series of approximate numbers and in the sense that it relates the numbers not to our senses but to one another, still the relations may be systematic or nonsystematic; and non-systematic relations, no matter what their origin, can be manipulated theoretically only in a context that envisages statistical laws.

Chapter X

 \mathbf{C}

ondence

REFLECTIVE UNDERSTAIDING

Like the acts of direct and introspective understanding, the act of reflective understanding is an insight. As they meet questions for intelligence, it meets questions for reflection. As they lead to definitions and formulations, it leads to judgments. As they grasp unity, or system, or ideal frequency, it grasps the sufficiency of the avidence for a prospective judgment.

When Archimedes shouled his Eureka, he was aware of a significant addition to his knowledge, but it is not likely that he would have been able to formulate explicitly just what a direct insight is. Similarly, we perform acts of reflective understanding, we know that we have grasped the sufficiency of the evidence for a judgment on which we have been deliberating, but without prolonged efforts at introspective analysis we could not say just what occurs in the reflective insight. What we know is that to pronounce judgment without that reflective grasp is merely to guess; again, what we know is that, once that grasp has occurred, then to referse to judge is just silly.

Accordingly, the present section will be an effort to determine what precisely is meant by the sufficiency of the evidence for a prospective judement. There is presupposed a question for reflection, "Is it so?". There follows a judgment, "It is so.". Between the two there is a marshalling and weighing of evidence. But what are the scales on which evidence is weighed? What does it have to weigh, if one is to pronounce a "Yes" or a "No"?

- 13 -

Unfortunately, the more complex judgments become, the more complex is the analysis of the grounding act of reflective understanding. The whole answer cannot be given at once and partial answers are incomplete. Hence, we shall begin from a very general statement and then illustrate its meaning from the form of deductive inference. Next, we shall turn to the concrete judgments of every day life, and consider in turn concrete judgments of fact, judgments on the correctness of insights into concrete situations, and finally the occurrence of analogies and generalizations. In the third place there will be considered the judgments of empirical science, the radical difference of such judgments from those of ordinary living, the nature of scientific generalization and verification, and what is meant by the probability of scientific opinions. Fourthly, analytic propositions and principles are distinguished and their criteria investigated, Fifthly, the nature of mathematical judgments is considered. Finally, we may add that philosophic judgments are not treated in this, buchter, for they can be examined satisfactorily only after further elements in the pro-

m

blem have been set forth.

- 14 -

THE GENETAL FORM OF REFLECTIVE INDIGAT

1.

grasp / evidence n

0

0

To graps evaluance as sufficient for a prospective judgment is to grasp the prospective judgment as virtually uncouditioned.

Distinguish then, baten the formally and the virtually unconditioned. The formally unconditioned has no conditions thatever. The virtually unconditioned has conditions indeed but they are fulfilled.

Accordingly, a virtually unconditioned involves three. plements, namely. 1) a conditioned, 2) a line between the conditioned and its conditions, and 3) the fulfilment of the conditions. Hence, a prospective judgment will be virtually unconditioned if 1) it is the conditioned, 2) its conditions are known, and 3) the conditions are fulfilled. By the mere fact that a question for reflection has been put, the prospective judgment is a conditioned; it stands in need of evidence sufficient for reasonable pronouncement. The function of reflective understanding is to meet the question for reflective understanding is to meet the question for reflective anderstandstatus of a virtually unconditioned; and reflective anderstanding effects this transformation by grasping the conditions of the conditioned and their fulfilment.

Such is the general scheme and we proceed to illustrate it from the form of deductive inference. Where A and B each stand for one or more propositions, the deductive form is:

- 15

if A, then B. Let A. Therefore B.

For instance:

0

If X is material and alive, X is mortal. But men are material and alive. Therefore, were are mortal.

Now the conclusion is a conditioned, for an argument is needed to so out it. The major presise links this conditioned to its conditions, for it affirms, If A, then B. The minor premise presents the fulfilment of the conditions, for it affirms the antecodent, A. The function, then, of the form of deductive inference is to exhibit a conclusion as j virtually enconditioned. Reflective insight grasps the pottern, and by rational compulsion there follows the julgment.

however, deductive inference cannot be the basic case of judgment, for it presupposes other judgments to be true. For that reason we have cold that the form of deductive inference is marely a clear illustration of what is meant by grasping a prospective judgment as virtually unconditioned. Far more general than the form of deductive inference is the form of refeature in ight itsolf. If there is to be a deduction, the link between the conditioned and its conditions must be a judgment, and the fulfilment of the conditions must be a further judgment. But judgments are the final products of cognitional process. Before the link between conditioned and conditions appears in the set of judgment, it existed in a more radioentary state within cognitional process itself.

the

- 16 -

Before the fulfilment of conditions appears in another act of judgment, it too was present in a more rudimentary state within cognitional process. The remarkable fact about reflective ideight is that it can make use of these more rudimentary elements in cognitional process to reach the virtually unconditioned. Let us now see how this is done in various cases.

CONCRETE JUNGMONTE OF PACT.

2.

Suppose a san to return from york to his tidy home and to fin! the windows smashed, sacke in the air, and water on the floor. Suppose him to make the extremely strained judgment of fact: Something happened. The question is, not whether he was right, but how he reached his affirmation.

The conditioned will be the Jacgment that something happened.

The fulfilling conditions will be two sots of data: the remembered data of his home as he left it in the morning; the present data of his home as he finds it in the evening. Observe that the fulfilling conditions are found on the level of presentations. They are not judgments, as is the minor promise of syllogism. They involve no questions for catelligence nor insights nor concepts. They lie simply on the level of past and present experience, of the occurrence of acts of seeing and smelling.

The link between the conditioned and the fulfilling conditions is a structure immement and operative within cognitional process. It is not a judgment. It is not a formulated set of concepts, such as a definition. It is simply a way of doing things, a procedure within the cognitional field.

- `17

The general form of all such structures and procedures has already been outlined in terms of the three levels of presentations, intelligence, and reflection. Specializations of the general form may be exceptied by the classical and statistical phases of empirical method, MMB by the notion of the thing, and by the differences between description and explanation. However, such accounts of the general form and its specializations pectain to introspective analysis. Prior to such an investigation and formulation, the structures and procedures exist and operate; nor, in general, do they operate any batter because the analysis has been effected.

Not, in the particular instance under consideration, err mer not only experi nees prevent dute and recells different data but by lirect incidnts he refers both cets of date to the same set of things which he calls his home. The direct insight, however, fulfils a double function. Not corely are two fields of individual data referred to one identical set of things but a second level of cognitional process is added to a first. The two together costain a specific structure of that process, which we may nume the notion of knowing enouge. Just as knowing a thing consists in grasping an intelligible unity-identity-whole in individual data, so knowing change consists in grapping the same identity or identities at different times in different individual data. If the same thing exhibits different in liviousl date at different times, it has changed. If there occurs a change, something has happened. But these are statements. If they are affirmed, they are juinments. But prior to being either statements or judgments, they exist as

С

C

- 18 -

unanalysed structures or procedures immanent and operative within cognitional process. It is such a structure that links the conditioned with the fulfilling conditions in the concrete judgment of fact.

The three elements have been assembled. On the level of presentations there are two sets of data. On the level of intelligence there is an insight referring both sets to the same things. When both levels are taken together, there is involved the notion of knowing change. Leflective understanding grasps all three as a virtually unconditioned to ground the ju gment, Something happened.

While our illustrative instance was as simple as it could be, still it provides the model for the analysis of more complex instances of the concrete judgment of fact. The fulfilling conditions may be any combination of data from the memories of a long life, and their acquisition may have involved exceptional powers of observation. The cognitional structure may suppose the cusulative development of understanding exceptified by the man of experience, the specialist, the expert. Both complex data and a complex structure may combine to yield a virtually on conditioned that introspective analysis could hardly hope to reproduce accurately and convincingly. But the general nature of the concrete judgment of fact would remain the same as in the simple case we considered.

However, the reader probably is asking how we know whether the insights that constitute the pivot of such structures are themselves correct. To this point we have now to turn.

-19

(472) 8

INSIGHTS INTO CONCRETE SITUATIONS

3.

Direct and introspective insights arise in response to an inquiring attitude. There are data to be understood; inquiry seeks understanding; and the insight arises as the relevant understanding. But a more bright idea is one thing, and a correct idea is another. How do we distinguish between the two?

The question is asked, not in its full generality but with respect to concrete situations that diverge from our expectations and by that divergence set us a problem. Thus, to retain our former illustration, the man on returning home might have said: There has been a fire. Since any fire there-might-have been, was extinguished, that judgment would suppose an insight that put two and two together. Our question is on what grounds such an insight could be pronounced correct.

First, then, observe that insights not only arise in answer to questions but also are followed by further questions. Observe, moreover, that such further questions ar of two kinds. They may stick to the initial issue, or they may go on to raise distinct issues. What started the fire? Where is my wife?, Observe, thirdly, that the transition to distinct issues may result from very different reasons; it may be because different interests supervene to draw attention elsewhere: but it may also be because the initial issue is exhausted, because about it there are no further questions to be asked.

Let us now distinguish between vulnerable and invulnerable insights. Insights are vulnerable when there are further questions to be asked on the same issue. For the further questions lead to

- 20 -

further insights that certainly complement the initial insight, that to a greater or loss extent modify its expression and implications, that perhaps load to an entirely new slent on the issue. But when there are no Cartber questions, the insight is invelnerable. For it is only through further questions that there arise the forther insights that complement, modify, or revise the initial approach and explonation.

Now this reveals a law immanent and operative in counitional process. Prior to our conceptual distinction between correct and mistaken insights, there is an operational distinction between invaluerable and valuerable insights. When an insight means the issue squarely, when it hits the bull's eye, when it settles the matter, there are no further questions to be asked and so there are no further further questions to be asked and so there are us further further questions that position. But shen the issue is not mat squarely, there are further questions that would reveal the unsatisfactoriness of the insight and would evoke the further insights that put a new light on the metter.

Such, then, is the basic element in our solution. The link between conditioned and its conditions is a law immanent and operative in cognitional process. The conditioned is the prospective judgment, This or that direct or introspective insight is correct. The immanent law of cognitional process may be formulated from our analysis. Each an insight is correct, if there are no further, pertinent questions.

At once it follows that the conditions for the prospective julgment are fulfilled when there are no further, pertinent questions.

a

- 21-

С

(474) 10

Note that it is not anough to any that the conditions are fulfilled when no further questions occur to me. The sure absence of further prestions in my mind can have other called. My intellectual curiosity may be stifled by other interacts. My experies to satisfy other drives may refuse the further questions a chance to emerge. To pass judg obt in that case is to be rash, to leap before one looks.

As there is rush judgment, so also there is more indecision. As the more absence of further questions in my mind is not enough, so it is too much to domand that the very possibility of further questions has to be excluded. If, in fact, there are no further questions, then, in fact, the insight is involmerable; if, in fact, the insight is involmerable; if, in fact, the insight is involmerable; if, in fact, the insight is involmerable; if approving it will be correct.

But her is one to strike this happy belance between rashness and ind-claion? Here is one to know when it is reached? Were there some simple formula or recipe is an wer to such questions, then mus of good judgment could be produced at will and indefinitely. All we can attempt is an analysis of the main factors in the problem and an outline of the general mature of their solution.

In the first place, thin, one has to give the further questions a chases to arise. The seed of intellectual curiosity has to grow into a rugged tree to hold its own against the losires and fears, conations and appetites, drives and interests, that inhabit the heart of man. Moreover, every insight has its retinue of presuppositions, implications, and applications. One has to take

- 22 -

0

C

the steps needed for that retinue to come to light. The presuppositions and implications of a given insight have to knit coherently with the presuppositions and implications of other insights. Its possibilities of concrete application have to enter into the field of operations and undergo the test of success or failure. I do not mean, of course, that concrete living is to pursue this logical and operational expansion in the explicit, deliberate, and elaborate manner of the scientific investigator. But I do mean that something equivalent is to be sought by intellectual alertness, by taking one's time, by talking things over, by putting viewpoints to the test of action.

人名法法法法法法法法法法法法法法 海上法 机可能加速度加速度

11

In the second place, the prior issue is to be noted. Behind the theory of correct insights, there is a theory of correct problems. It was to dodge this prior issue that we supposed a concrete situation that diverges from our expectations and by that divergence defines a problem. In other words, there has been postulated an inquirer that understands the background of the situation and so knows what is to be expected; there also has been postulated a problem that exists, that is accurately defined by the divergence of the situation from correct expectations, that in turn provides a definition of the pertinence of any further questions.

 \mathbf{C}

۲

C

Not this amounts to saying that good judgment about any insight has to set on the previous acquisition of a large number of other, connected, and correct insights. But before attempting to break this vicious circle, let us assure ourselves of the fact of its existence. Children ask endless questions; we have no

۵

- 23-

476/12

doubt about their intellectual curiosity: but so far from craditing them with good judgment, we do not suppose them to reach the age of reason before their seventh year. Young men and weaten have the alertness of mini that justifies their crowling into schools and universities, but the law doubts the soundness of their judgment and regards them as minors, while Aristotle denied they had enough experience to study ethics with profit. Nor is there merely the initial difficulty of acquisition but, as well, there is the subsequent necessity of keeping in touch. The man that returns to a field of commerce end industry, to a profession or a milieu, in which once he was completely at home, may try to carry on from where he left off. But unless he learns to be more wary from mistakes and minor ineptitudes, he is merely inviting blunders and disaster. Good judgment about concrete insights presupposes the prior acquisition of an organized set of complementary insights.

In the third place, then, there is the process of learning. It is the gradual acquisition and accumulation of insights bearing on a single domain. During that process one's own judgment is in abeyance. It is being developed and formed but it has not yet reached the maturity needed for its independent exercise. For the gradual acquisition and accumulation of insights is not merely a matter of advancing in direct or introspective understanding. At (the same time, intellectual curiosity is asserting itself against other desires. At the same time, the logical retinues of presuppositions and implications of each insight are being expanded either to conflict and provoke further questions or else to mesh into coherence. At the same time, operational possibilities are

- 24 -

0

C

envisaged to be tested in thought experiments, to be contrasted Amounted with actual practice, to be tested in ventures that gradually increase in moment and scope to enlighten us by failures and to generate confidence through success.

13

It, is the process of learning that breaks the vicious circle. Judgment on the correctness of insights supposes the prior acquisition of a large number of correct insights. But the prior insights are not correct because we judge them to be correct. They occur within a self-correcting process in which the short+comings of each insight provoke further questions to yield complementary insights. Moreover, this self-correcting process tends to a limit. We become familiar with concrete situations; we know what to expect; when the unexpected occurs, we can spot just what happened and why and that can be done to favor or to prevent such a recurrence; or, if the unexpected is quite novel, we know enough to recommence the process of learning and we can recognize when, once more, that welf-correcting process reaches its limit in familierity with the concrete situation and in easy mastery of it.

In the fourth place, rashness and indecision commonly have a basis in temperament. Apart from occational outbursts, that we view as out of character, the rash man nearly always is quite sure and the indecisive man regularly is unable to make up his mind. In such cases it is not enough to point out that learning is a selfcorrecting process that tends to a limit or that, while the limit is not marked with a label, still its attainment is revealed by a habitual ability to know just what is up. For unless a special effort is made to cope with temperament itself, the rash man

- 25 -

O

0

С

continues to presume too quickly that he has nothing more to learn, and the indecisive sum continues to suspect that deeper depths of shadowy possibilities threaten to invalidate what he knows quite well.

11

Finally, we note that we leave to another occasion a fiscussion of the philosophic obtains that no one ever can be cartain. Our introducte purpose is to explain the facts. Homen judgwents and refusals to judge oscillate about a central mean. If the procise locue of that divide an needly be defined, at least there are many points on which even the rash would not venture to promessive and (a) near others on which even the indecisive would not doubt. That, then, is the general form of such certitude of ignorance and is scheduling?

Our answer is in term of the virtually uncouditioned. These occurs a reflective insight is which at once one grasps 1) a conditioned, the prospective judgment that a given direct or introspective insight is correct, 2) a line between the conditioned and its conditions, and this on introspective analysis proves to be that an insight is correct if it is invelocrable and it is invaluerable if there are no further, pertinent questions, and 3) the fulfilsent of the conditions, namely, that the given insight does put an end to further, pertinent questioning and that this occurs in a mind that is about, familiar with the concrete situation, and intellectually master of it.

26

0

0

CONCRETE ANALOGIES AND GENERALIZATIONS

4.

0

О

0

Two brief corollaries have to be drawn.

An argument from analogy assumes that some concrete situation, A, is correctly understood. It argues that some other similar situation, B, is to be understood in the same fashion.

A generalization makes the same assumption to argue that any other similar situation, X, is to be understood in the same fashion.

In both cases what is at work is the las, immanent and operative in cognitional process, that similars are similarly understood. Unless there is a significant difference in the data, there cannot be a difference in unlerstanding the data. This point has already been made in discussing the feuristic Procedure of the classical phase of empirical method. Clearly enough, it holds not merely for regularities, rules, laws, correlations but also for ideal frequencies and for things. A second look does not necessarily mean one is looking at a second thing. A second actual frequency does not necessarily mean that one will establish a ideal frequency. For there to be a second thing or a second ideal frequency an appropriate difference in the data has to be supposed.

In the simplest possible manner then, our analysis resolves the so-called problem of induction. It makes the transition from one particular case to another or from a particular case to the general case an almost automatic procedure of intelligence. We appeal to analogies and we generalize because we cannot help

- 27 -

O

understanding similars similarly. This solution, be it noted, squares with the broad fact that there is no problem of teaching men to generalize. There is a problem of teaching them to frame their generalizations accurately: indeed, the whole point of the analogy is that it absolves one from that conceptual task and the complexities it involves. There is, above all, a problem of preventing men from generalizing on insufficient grounds, and very easily such grounds are merely putative. 16

For if our view makes generalization an easy matter, it also clips the generalizer's wings. There must be a correct insight with respect to the basic situation. Before similars can be similarly understood, there is aceded an act of understanding: and if that act is mistaken in the first instance, it will be equally mistaken in the second. But, as we have seen, to know one's insights are correct presupposes a process of learning and the attainment of familiarity and mastery. Further, the analogous or the general situation - st be similar. If there is any significant dissimilarity, then further, pertinent questions arise to complement, to modify, perhaps to revise the basic insight. Finally, and this is the real catch, what differences are significant? My familiarity and mastery of the initial situation enables me to tell whether further questions there, are pertinent. Another's familiarity and mastery of the analogous situation would enable him to tell whether further questions are pertinent in that situation. But unless the two situations are similar in all respects, my familiarity with one does not enable me to tell whether or not further questions arise when my insight is transferred to the other.

- 28 -

0

С

To conclude, analogy and generalization are essentially valid procedures. But when their basis is an insight into a concrete situation, the conditions of their proper use can become so stringent as to render them almost useless. It is this fact that grounds the suspicion with which men greet arguments from analogy and generalizations. But, at the same time, there is a compensating factor that arises from human collaboration in the process of learning. To this we have now to turn our attention. 17

COMMON SENSE

Common sense is that vague name given to the unknown source of a large and floating population of elementary judgments which everyone makes, everyone relies on, and almost everyone regards as obvious and indisputable. Three points, I think, call for our attention: 1) the source of these judgments, 2) their proper object or field, and 3) their relation to empirical science. Common- Ange The proximate ground and source of common-sense judgments 110 Source of in the procedures just described, of concrete judgments of fact, judgments on the correctness of insights into concrete situations, and concrete analogies and generalizations. The remote source is more complex. One has to envisage these procedures carried out, not by isolated individuals, but by members of families, of tribes, of nations, over the face of the earth for generation after generation. One has to take into account the diffusion of judgments by communication and their transmission by tradition. Finally,

- 29 -

0

O

О

5.

one has to note that there results not merely an enlargement but also a unification and transformation of the self-correcting process of learning. 18

If I may repeat myself, besides Backaus, the hard way of it wings out for one solf, there is the comparatively easy way of Learning from others. Archlundes had to rack his brains to discover what every schoolboy can be taught. For teaching is a vest acceleration of the process of learning. It throws out the clues, the pointed hints, that lead to insights: it cajolos attention to remove the distracting images that proceet them: it puts the further questions that reveal the need of further insights to complement and modify and transform the acquired store; it grasps the seriation of acts of understanding to begin from the simple and work towards the more complex. But that is done explicitly and deliberately by professional teachers, also is done implicitly and unconsciously by parents with their children and by equals among themselves. Talking is a basic human art; by it each reveals what he knows and provokes from others the further questions that direct his attention to what he had overlooked. More general and more impressive than talking is doing: deeds excite our admiration and stir us to emulation; we watch to see how things are done; we experiment to see if we can do them ourselves; we watch again to discover the oversights that led to our failures. Thus it is that what anyone discovers passes into the possession of mony, to be checked against their experience and to be confronted with the test of their further questions. Thus too, it is that the discoveries of different individuals enter into single, cumulative series; that the later

- 30 -

O

О

G

· 0

presupposes and improves upon the earlier; and that the stortingpoint of each generation is where its predecessor left off. 19

The remote source then of common-sense judgments is a collaboration. The self-correcting process of learning goes on in the minds of individuals, but the individual minds are in communication. The results reached by one are checked by many, and new results are added to old to form a common fund from which each draws his variable share measured by his interests and his energy.

There is another side to the story. It is human to err, and common-sense judgments are very human. They rest upon the selfcorrecting process of leading as transformed by communication and collaboration. But men share not only in intellectual curiosity but also in more earthy passions and prejudices. The mixed character of human drives can generate a common deviation from the pure product of intelligence and even a common dishonesty in refusing to acknowledge the effective pertinence of further, pertiment questions. So it is that we find each tribe and nation, each group and class, prone to develop its dyn brand of common sense and to strengthen its convictions by pouring ridicule upon the common nonsense of others. From the contradictory varieties of common sense, men have appealed to the common consent of the human race. But one may well doubt that such a procedure goes quite to the root of the matter. If one must suspect the collaboration of groups and classes, of tribes and nations, it does not follow that one cannot suspect the collaboration of mankind. Error is not primarily a class product or a national product. It is human. The group or class, the tribe or nation, only gives a more

Ô

O

C

- 31 -

Ο

specific twist to the mixed motives of human effort. Undertake to select the judgments on which all men agree, and you have no guarantee either that when all men agree they will do so from the pure and detached motives of intelligence and reason or, indeed, that you yourself in your investigation and selection have operated exclusively from that unmixed drive.

20

The collaboration, named convent sense, not only offers encreases benefits and advantages but it also intertained them $\frac{2\pi^2 G^2}{2\pi^2}$ (2) with more than a larger of deviation and abstration. Nor do we conserved, stand outside this collaboration as spectators. We were born into it. We had no choice but to become participants, to profit by its benefits, and to share in its ervors. We have no choice about withdrawing from it, for the plast development of one's own intellect can no more easily be flotted out than the past growth of one's body, and future development will have to take place under essentially the care conditions and limitations as that of the past. There is, then, a fundamental problem, and how it is to be met, the care of our immediate objective has to be confined to discerning the field or domain within which common sense might be expected to operate successfully. This brings us to our second topic.

Object of Common Surgements. Already a distinction has been drawn between description and explanation. Description deals with thinks as related to us. Explanation deals with the same things as related along themselves. The two are not totally independent, for they deal with the same things and, as we have seen, description supplies, as it were, the tweezers by which we hold things while explanations are being discovered or verified, applied or revised. But despite their

0

- 32 -

0

intimate connection, it remains that description and explanation envisage things in fordamentally different manners. The rolations of things among themselves are, in reneral, a different field from the relations of things to us. There is an apparent overlapping only when we consider the relations of men among themselves: and then the different procedures of description and explanation prevent the overlapping from being more than apparent, for description is in terms of the given while explanation is in terms of the ultimates reached by analysis.

21

Not only are description and explanation distinct, but there are two main varieties of description. There are the orlinary de criptions that can be cast in orlinary language. There are also scientific descriptions for which ordinary language quickly proves inadequate and so is forced to yield its place to a special, technical terminology. Nor is it difficult to discern behind these linguistic differences a more fundamental difference. Both ordinary and scientific description are concerned with things as related to us, but both are not concerned with the same relations to us. The scientist selects the relations of things to us that lead more directly to knowledge of the relations between things themselves. Ordinary description is free from this ulterior preoccupation. As it begins, so also it ends with human apprehensions and interests as its center.

0

О

С

There exists then a determinate field or domain of ordinary description. Its defining or formal viewpoint is the thing as related to us, as it enters into the concerns of man. Its object is what is to be known by concrete judgments of fact, by judgments on the correctness of insights into concrete situations, by concrete

- 33 -

analogies and generalizations, and by the collaboration of common sense. It is as much an object of knorledge as any other, for it is reached by beginning from the level of presentations, by advancing through inquiry, insights, and formulation, by culminating in the critical inquiry of reflective understanding, the grasp of the unconditioned, and the rationally compelled pronouncement of judgment. To anticipate a later vocabulary, the domain of ordinary description is a section of the universe of being, of what intelligently is grasped and reasonably is affirmed. How much of that section really is reached by ordinary description, is of course, a further question. At least, it is something to know the goal at which it aims, and that has been our restricted topic.

But before going on to our third topic, it may be well to preclude possible misconceptions. First, then, the human collaboration that results in a common sense involves belief. The analysis of belief cannot all yet be undertaken. But the type of belief that is essential in this collaboration resembles that of the pupil, who belie wes his teacher only that later he himself may understand and be able to judge for himself. It resembles that of the scientist, who does not insist on exploring for himself all the blind allies down which his predecessors teadered but is content to test their final results either directly, by repeating experiments; or, more commonly, by operating on the principle that, if those results were erroneous, the error would be revealed indirectly in the experiments he himself does perform. Hence it is that a man pronouncing a common-sense judgment is convinced that he is uttering,

0

- 36 -

C

Ο

0

not what someone else told him, but what he himself knows.

Secondly, the human colleboration that results in a common sense is under the dominance of practical considerations and pragmatic sanctions. The further questions that arise and are considered pertinent, do not come from any theoretical realm, and the tests that are employed move within the orbit of human success and failure. Still that dominance, so far from vitiating the results, is dictated by the object to be known, by the thing as it is related to us and as it endters into the concerns of men. It was a philosophic school that invented the notion that ideas are true because they happen to work. Despite its practicality, common sense is convinged that ideas work only if they are true. Nor is this surprising, for the practical further question is a further question that leads to the modification or revision of an insight; and the pragmatic criterion of success is the absence of the failure that would reveal the necessity of thinking things out afresh.

Thirdly, the human collaboration that results in a common sense is subject to the deviations and aberrations that have thair root in the mixed motives of man. But it is only in so far as I myself share in those mixed motives that my understanding and my judgment will suffer the same bias and fall in line with the same deviations and aberrations. As long as I share in them, my efforts at correction and selection will be just as suspect as the judgments I wish to eliminate. It is only when I go to the root of the matter and become efficaciously critical of myself that I can begin to become a reliable judge; and then that becoming will consist in the self-correcting process of learning best which has

- 35 -

0

О

0

Ø.

already been described. Common-sense Judg ment and Empirical Science. Our third main toric was the relation of common sense to

5.3

O

0

science, and our fundamental assertion is that the two regard distinct and separate fields. Common sense is concerned with things as related to us. Science is concerned with things as related among themselves. In principle, they cannot conflict, for if they speak about the same things, they do so from ratically different viewpoints.

When I say that in principle they cannot conflict, I mean of course, that in fact they can and do. To eliminate actual conflict, it is necessary to grasp the principle and to apply it accurately.

The basic difficulty has been to grasp the principle. The scientists of the Renaissance were guite aware that there was some difference in principle, but they expressed it by a distinction between primary and secondary qualities. Science is concerned with things and their primary qualities, that is, with things as they really are. Common sense is concerned with things, with their primary qualities, and most of all with their secondary qualities. that is, mainly with things as they manely appear. On this showing, knowladge is science, and where common sense diverges from science, partly it is the darkness of ignorance and error, partly it is the twilight soon to be replaced by a scientific dayn. Noturally enough such exclusive pretensions were met by opposite pretensions equally exclusive, and the debate raged on a mistaken is ue. Today, I think, we can be not only cooler but also wiser about the earlier chapters, whole matter. As has been argued in the sections' Insge and

- 36 -

Renth nuclear Description and Accession, it is necessary to distinguish within knowledge between separate yet complementary domains. There is a comprehensive, universal, invariant, nonimaginable docuda: its object is the thing-itself, with differences in kind defined by e conjugates, and with differences in state defined by ideal frequencies. These is also an experiantial, particular, relative, imaginable domain; its object is the thing-for-us, with differences is kind defined by w conjugates, and with differences in state defined by expectations of the normal. The form of field of empirical science in to be reached only by abstracting from the expirical residue, of the and antial non-systematically dive pont, the of the continuer. The latter field include, the wassimabi empirical retine: It views thin is in their individuality, their

The significance of this listinction appears in Jogic as the separation of two universes of discourse. To put the matter concretely, let us take illustrative propositions and consider the three cases of 1) ignoring the distinction of the domains, 2) longing the distinction of the domains, and 3) accepting the distinction of the domains. First, if one ignores the distinction of the domains, then one has the problem of choosing between the propositions:

seei most determinations, their arbitrariness, their continuity.

The plan te nove in approximately elliptical orbits with the sum at their focus.

- .37 -

C

0

The earth is at rest, and the sum rises and sets. Actondize

26

From every viewpoint, the planets move in alliptical orbits with the sun at their focus.

From every viewpoint, the earth is at rest and the sun rises and sets.

Thirdly, if one affirms the distinction of the domains, then one will reject all four of the preceding propositions to assert both of the following:

From the viewpoint of explanation, the planets move in approximately elliptical orbits with the sun at their focus.

From the viewpoint of ordinary description, the earth is at rest and the sun rises and sets.

On this third position there result two separate universes of discourse. All the affirmations of empirical science contain the qualifying reservation, "from the viewpoint of explanation". Similarly, all the affirmations of common sense contain the qualifying reservation, "from the viewpoint of ordinary description". Automatically, all logical conflict is eliminated, for the qualifying reservations prevent the propositions of one universe from contradicting the propositions of the other.

O

O

С

Underlying this logical superation, there will be more fundamental methodological differences. Both ordinary description and empirical science reach their conclusions through the self-correcting process of learning. Still they reach very different conclusions because though they use essentially the same process, they operate 35 with different standards and criteria. What is a further, portinent question for empirical science is not necessarily

0

- 38

a further, pertinent question for addinary description. Inversely, what is a further, pertinent question for ordinary description is not pacessarily a further, pertinent question for empirical science. It is this fundamental difference in the criterion of the relevance of further questions that areas the great divide between a scientific attitude and a common-sense attitude. Because he aims at ultimate explanation, the scientist has to keep asking "Why?", until altimate explanation is reached. Because the laymon aims at Lioring things as related to us, as entering into the domain of human concerns, his questioning ceases as soon as further lequiry would lead to no immediate, appreciable difference in the daily life of man. Hence it is that the layman is attempting to impose his criteria on the scientist then he asks him what he is doing and follows that up with the further question:"What is the good of it?", For if the practical question can be put to engineers and technologists and medical doctors, its only effect upon gure science would be to eliminate all further progress. Inversely, the pure scientist is attrapting to impose his criteria upon common sense, when he interprets a practical attitude as a lack of interest in truth; it is, indeed, a lack of interest in the truth that the scientist seeks, but that is not the sole domain in which truth is to be learned. Reflective understanding can reach the virtually unconditioned to pronomina cor set bulls gets of concrete fact and to discover. correct insights into concrete situations. Without those besic judgments, science has no starting-point and, as well, the

27

- 39 -

0

0

С

C

glorious achievemmets of applied science cannot be truly affirmed.

The difference of the domains appears not only in different criteria of the pertinence of further questions but also in the difference of the terms employed and in the possibilities they respectively offer for logical deduction. Because ordinary description is concerned with things-for-us, it derives its terms from every#day experience: because the elements of daily experience are constant, the terms of ordinary description are constant; visible shapes and the spectrum of colors, the volume, pitch, and tone of sounds, the hot and cold, wet and dry, hard and soft, slow and swift, now and then, here and there, do not shift in meaning with the successive revisions of scientific theories; the concrete unities that are men and animals and plants, the regularities of nature and the expectations of a normal course of events form a necessary and unchanged basis and context into which applied science introduces its improvements. A Inversely, because science seeks knowledge of the things as related among themselves, because such relations lie outside our immediate experience, because the ultimates in such relations are to be reached only when ultimate explanation is reached, each great forward step of scientific knowledge involves a more or less profound revision of its fundamental terms. Again, because science is analytic and abstractive, its terms are exact; because its correlations purport to be generally valid, they must be determined with utmost precision; because its terms are exact and its correlations general, it must be ready to bear the washesht of a vast super#structure of logical deductions in which each conclusion must be equally exact and valid

- 40

0

O

O

wight n

Fenerally. On the other hard, as we neve such, ordinary defeription must be perpetually on its grand against analogies gal compraalizations; for though sighters are similarly understood, still concepts situations morely are similar, and the synthesis of an acgreests of concrete situations is not itself a concrete situation. Because things foll away for an Pole Star in the workern hemisphare, it does not follow that they will do so in the conthern. Because within the many of hereas vision the easth is approxistely flat, it does not follow that the integration of all such views will be a flat surface. The procedure of sound compon sense is not to generalize nor to argue from suelogy, but to rate in the insights gained in fo cor experience and to add the complementary insights no doch in fresh situations. The collaboration of common sense aims, not at establishing general trather, but at bullding up a core of habicual and sector log that is to be adjusted by further Learning in each as adjustion that guiser.

റ

The New porog m

0

O

0

Common sense, they, the its one specialized field or dessin. It has its own emitteria on the relevance of further questions. It has its own b sically constant vocabulary, its proper universe of discourses, and its own methodological precepts of keeping to the concrete, of speaking in human terms, of avoiding analogies and memeralizations and deductions, of acknowlodging that it does not keepe the abstract, the universal, the ultimate. Precisely because it is no conflued, contour successed exploitly formulate its own methodology. There it has to learn, if it could limit properly its pronouncements, but it has to learn them in its own chread fusion through instances

- 41 -

494 30

O

and examples, fables and lessons, preadigms and proverbs, that will function in future julements not as provises for deductions but as possibly relevant rules of procedure. Finally, because common sense has to be acculted, it is not possessed equally by all. It has its adapt couples that noke mistakes, indeed, but also learn by them. Nithin their familiar field they are masters, and (a_1) well they know that their mactery ends then they step beyond its limits. Above all they know that they must master their own hearts, that the pull of loare, the puck of fear, the desper corrects of pession are poor corrected by ours on bole as of that full, untroubled, numerried view denoted by sure and bole med julement.

If the domains of colerce and cosmon sense are distinct, so also they are comple intary. If () one must recognize the differences in their objects, their criteria, their universes of discourse, their methodological procepts, one must also in ist that they are the functionally related purer within a single knowledge of a simile world. The intelligibility that acleace grasps corprehensively is the intelligibility of the concrete with which corpon sease deals affectively. To regard them as rivals or competitors is a mistake, for assentially they ar partners and it is their successful cooperation that constitutes applied science and technology, that adds inventions to accontinie discoveries, that surplaments inventions with organizations, know-how, and op cisiined allies was if combo as see itself, once it is superied with its appropriate withing, has little difficulty in recognizing this fact, theorists of science can hardly be credited with an equal theperspicacity. Misled by a confusion between heuristic and the

- 42 -

Ö

O

representative functions of imagination, they assumed that the business of science was to paint a picture of the really real. If, as we have argued, such a picture is essentially unverifiable and gratuitous, it cannot coincide with the verifiable pictures of common sense. If from this conflict the theorists of science proceeded to conclude that common sense must be some brutish survival, that it was in need of being instructed in lofty tones on the far superior virtues and techniques of the scientist, one cannot be surprised that common sease retaliated with its jokes on the ineptitude of the theorists and professors and with its quietly imperious demand that, if they were to justify their existence, they had best continue to provide palpable willance of their usefulness, But such opposition, I would contend, does justice neither to common sense nor to science: it has no better basis than a mistakon theory; and it had best be written off as an error incidental to an age of treasition. During the pest four centuries, empirical science has emerged and developed, to set us the twofold. arablem both of determining its nature and of working out the proper adjustment of the complementary functions of common sense. If such large problems cannot be solved in short order, one should not infer that they cannot be solved at all.

To conclude, common sense is one thing and common sense jud mants are another. Common sense is common and specific. It is a specialized down to of knowledge with a proper universe of discourse, proper criterie on the particulate of further questions, and proper methodological precepts. Operation within that domain is basically and furthermantally a communal collaboration in the self-

റ

0

O

- 43 -

correcting process of learning. The fruit of that collaboration is a habitual core of accumulated insights into concrete situations and into the procedures nucled to complement and adjust that core before one can pass julyment on further, concrete situations. Hence it is that common sense jugments are issued, not by come public authority named common sense, but only by individual judges in their own individual situations. Further, they can be known to be correct only by the individual julges in the individual situations, for no one else is in pospession of the evidence as it is given and no one else is informed with the familiarity and mestory that result from the self-correcting process of learning within that situation. I can be certain that I am writing this, and you can be certain that you are reading it. But it is quite another matter for you to be certain that I am correct in affirming that I am whithny, as it will be quite another matter for me to be certain that you are correct in affirming that you are realing. The common element in common sense is not some list of general truths about which all app can agree: it is not some list of particular truths about which all men can agree; but it is a collaboration in the erection of a basic structure by which, with appropriate adjustments, each individual is enabled to fill out his individual list of particular truths. Finally, each of those particular pronouncements occurs inasmuch as reflective understanding grasps the virtually moonditioned in the manner described in the subsections on concrete judements of fact and on judements on the correctness of insights into concrete situations.

0

റ

0

0

ര

PROBABLE JUDGMEETS

Then the virtually uncould tioned is grouped by reflective while stabling, we office for deay absolutely. When there is no proponderance of evidence in favor of either affirmation or denial, we can only acknowly by uncounter. But between these extremes there is a sector of intervaliate positions, and probable judgments are their outcome.

This probability of indepent differs from the probability investigated in the statistical show. As has been doen, the probable expectation answers a question for intelligence by assigning un ideal frequency from thich detual events non-systematically diverge. But the probable judgment convers a question for reflection a d, though it enticipates a divargance between the judecent an extend fact, still the ground of this enticipation if a, not in a non-systematic element in the facts, but in the incoordinates of our and lodge. Hence, judgments been then instations, and about probability expectations, may be the day be only probable.

Probable juste with differ from guesses. In both closes kindledje is incorplane. In both cases reflective understanding fails to reach the virtually anuanditioned. But the mean is a non-retional venture beyond the evidence that resembles the nonsystematic accord of events. On the other hand, the probable julgant resolve from utilised proceiners. Though it rests on incorplete knowledge, still there has to be some approximation towards completeness. Though it fails to reach the virtually

λ**Γ**

0

6.

О

 \mathbf{O}

unconditioned, still it has to be closing in upon that exigent norm. Thus, one may say that guesses are probably true only in the statistical cause of diverging non-systematically from true judgments: but probable judgments are probably true in the non-statistical cause of converging upon true in byments, of approaching them a - a limit.

It is the nature of this approximation, approach, convergence, that constitutes the problem of the probable judement. What precisely can be specifiby such metaphors? If anything is meant, then how can it be known? Ho one surely makes a probable judgment when he can make a certain judgment: yet how can the probable be known to approach the certain, when the certain is unknown?

Fortunately, such paradox is not as acute as it may seen. We seek the truth because we do not know it. But, though we do not know it, still we can recognize it when we reach it. In like manner we also are able to recognize when we are getting near it. As we have seen, the relf-correcting process of learning consists in a sequence of questions, insights, further questions, and further invights that moves towards a limit in which no further, pertinent questions arise. When we are well beyond that limit, judgments are obviously certain. When we are well short of that limit, judgments are at best probable. When we are on the borderline, the rash are completely certain and the indecisive full of doubte. In brief, because the self-correcting process of learning is an approach to a limit of no further, pertinent questions, there are probable judgments that are probably true in the sense that they approximate to a truth that as yet is not known.

40 -

O

Directly the foregoing analysis regards the probability of judgments on the correctness of insights into concrete situations. Indiractly, it can be extended to all other probable jutiments. Thus, concrete jutiments of fact involve some insight that links the level of presentation with the question for reflection, and so the probability of such concrete judgments may be reduced to the probability of the correctness of the insight they involve. Dil something happen? Something did happen if the same set of things exhibits different data at different times. An insight is required to grasp the identity of the things, and such an identification may be contain or probable. But the data exhibited at different times either differ or do not differ. If no difference is detected, there is no ground whatever for asserting change. If any difference is detected, there are the grounds for asserting change. If you do not remember accurately the former data, then you just dant know whether or not there was a change. If you are inclined to think that the former data were different, then the issue shifts. What inclines you to think so? Any reason that can be offered will suppose some insight into the objective course of events or into the habits of your memory, and it is that insight that gives rise to probability. More complex cases call for a more complex analysis, but the general lines of the analysis will be the same.

This brings us to the probability of the empirical sciences. Two questions arise. Why are their conclusions no more than probable? In what sense are their conclusions an approximation to what is true and certain? Discussion of analytic propositions is

О

О

0

- 47 -

Ö

deferred to the next subsection and so we have to consider the empirical ociences in their generalizations and in their particular judgments of fact.

Since similars cannot but be similarly understood, generalization itself offers no difficulty. If the particular case is understood correctly, then every similar case will be understood correctly. If the problem of induction above because the rest of the particular cases were not inspected, then that problem would be insoluble because the rest of the particular cases never are inspected: make they, there would be no generalization. In fact, the problem of induction arises because the particular case may not be properly understood; and it is solved by seeking that correct rest understanding.

Still, seeking is one thing and finding another. Empirical science gets its start by hitting off significant correlations. The correlations implicitly define abstract correlatives. But precisely because they are abstract, the return to the concrete is greated with further questions. The law of the lever is simplicity itself. But to have an independent measurement of weights, one needs the law of the spring. To test the law accurately, one needs the theorem on centers of gravity. To formulate the law, one further needs the geometry of perpendiculars. Automatically one has embarked upon a vectorial representation of forces, an assumption of Euclidean geometry, a theory of the application of forces at a point, a parallel investigation of the tension of wires, and a certain amount of dabbling with gravitation. Automatically, further questions active. Not only do they active from the concrete.

- 48 -

0

о

problems set by tension and gravitation, which internative rise to further quastions. What is far more simificant is the presence of the highly abstract the trans and procedures. which give repreter commons reages of furking quastions. Can every force be represented by a vector? Are all forces applied at a point? Did fuelid have the last word? The initial abstraction allows one to return to the concrete only after the exploration of successively widening circles of inquiry. Statics is mastered only to raise the problems of kinetics. Kinetics is mastered only to reveal that thermal and electro-magnetic phenomena may be the antecedents or the consequents of local movements. One begins to get the lot in line and to feel that the future of physics is a matter of determining accurately a few more decimal points when along come a Planck and an Einstein with their further questions.

10

37

The generalization of classical laws, then, is no more than probable because the application of single laws raises further questions that head towards the systematization of a whole field. In turn, such systematization is no more than probable until the limit of no further, pertinent questions is reached. But that limit is not reached, first, if there may be further, unknown facts that would raise further questions to force a revision or, secondly, if there may be further, known facts whose capacity to raise such further questions is not grasped.

Similar considerations render the generalization of statistical laws no more than probable. For statistical laws presuppose some classification of events. One is not going to alvance

- 49 -

0

0

Ο

502 38

quantum theory by investigating baseball averages. Hence definitive statistical laws suppose definitive classifications. The future discovery of new kinds or of new subwdivisions of subwatomic elements will invite a revision of the statistical laws. Similarly, more accurate investigations may lead to the discommont within the statistical law of a systematic element that can be abstracted in classical form to leave a new statistical residue.

If empirical generalizations are no more than probable. what about the particular facts that ground them? Here a distinction seems necessary. In so far as such facts are expressed in the terms of ordinary description, they fall under the criteria of the concrete judgment of fact. In so far as they are relevant to be the establishment of a scientific theory, they come under the control of empirical method. What has to be observed is, not the percept with its spontaneous integration into the processes of sensitive living, but the sheer datum that is stripped of memories, associations, and anticipations. Again, measurements must conform to the best evailable rules and utilize the best available instruments. Finally, the observables have to be the terms defined by the theoretical structure, and an this structure is subject to revision. so also are its definitions. Hence, one may say that empirical science is solidly grounded in fact in virtue of its concrete ju . ments and, at the same time, add that technical developments and theoretical advance can render such facts more or less obsolescent.

But if empirical science is no more than probable, still it truly is probable. If it does not attain definitive truth, still

0

50

О

it converges upon truth. This convergence, this increasing approximation, is what is meant by the familiar phrase, the advance of science. Questions yield invights that are expressed in hypotheses: the testing of hypotheses rules further questions that generate complementary insights and more satisfactory hypotheses. For a while the process advances in widening circles; then the coherence of system builds to close in; investigation turns from fresh ventures in n w fields to the labor of consolidation, of working out implications fully, of settling issues that leave the general view unchanged. The self-correcting process of learning is palpably approaching a limit, fo thet, at the very time radical proposals for revision become again possible, the open minds of, scientists are becoming closed. As Max Planck put it: " A new scientific truth does not triumph by convincing its opponents and making them see the light, but rather because its opponents eventually die, and a new generation grows up that is familiar With It. Scientific Autobiography and Other Privers, Her York 1949.

39

50

An ulterior question may be raised. Is scientific process progress intefinite? Does the self-correcting process of learning reach one limit only to discover, sooner or later, that there are further developments to be effected? If I am unable to answer this question directly, still certain observations seem relevant.

First, the alwance of science through increasing accuracy would seem to head towards a limit. A measurement is not a point but an interval, not simply a number but a number plus or minus some quantity determined by a theory of errors. Hence increasing accuracy has to result from the invention of new techniques and

- 51 -

0

Ο

(504) 40

റ

instruments and, while such inventions may go well beyond our present anticipations, still a have no reacon to expect an infinite particular of them. Once such possibilities become enhanced, the <u>Canon selection forcant</u> <u>principle of weightion cores into they. Excision method settles</u> andy the theoretical differences that imply sensible differences. If a second theory su clants a first by alvanuing from the second decidal place to the fourth, and a third surplants the second by advancing from the fourth decimal place to the sirth, it does not follow that there was be a weight theory established by alvancing from 20 decimals to (2n + 2), where <u>n</u> is as large a number as you places.

Secondly, as the sevence of science has abover limit in the field of presentations, so also it has an upper limit in the basic structure of the human mind. Theories can be revised if there is a revisor. But to talk about revising the revisers is to enter a field of appty speculation in which the name, revision, losus its determinate meaning. Moreover, theorists take about a of this fort. Thus, the foundations of logic are placed in the inevitabilities of our processes of thought. How is logic so unique example. As we have already indicated, the theory of relativity in its basic postulate rests upon a structural feature of our cognitional process. Now if the invariants governing mental process imply invariants (), our theoretical constructions, there will follow an a por limit to the variation of theoretical constructions and a possibility of mapping out in advance the alternatives between which theoretical effort has to choose. To this to de as return d cutegories of the in investigating that will be named the formi

- 52 -

0

С

C

range of proportionate being.

O

О

0

In conclusion, it may be noted that these considerations confirm the positive probability of the conclusions of empirical science. For those conclusions are probable inasmuch as the selfcorrecting process of learning is approaching a limit. Our argument was based upon the immanent tendency of the process itself to a limit, inasmuch as each great stage of scientific development heads for the closed coherence of system, and each successive system grips the facts with greater nuance and accuracy over wider expresses of data. Still this immanent tendency receives confirmation if there exist external limitations to the process itself. For they too, point to the possibility of some system, as yet unknown, that is increasingly determined inasmuch as it will have to meet the requirement of varification in a body of fact that is increasingly large and increasingly organized.

0

77

- 53 -

7. ANALYTIC PROFOSITIONS AND PRINCIPLES,

C

0

О

О

A proposition is what is proposed either for consideration or for affirmation. An analysis of propositions is reached by distinguishing what is meant from acts of meaning and from sources of meaning. Any cognitional activity is a source of meaning. Conceiving, judging, and uttoring are three quite different acts of meaning. Finally, as sources lead to acts of meaning, so acts refer to terms of meaning, to what is meant.

506

Terms of meaning may be divided in two ways. There is the basic distinction between what is meant when one affirms or denies and, on the other hand, what is meant when one merely considers, supposes, defines. Again, in utterances there is the obvious distinction between the incomplete meaning of a word and the complete meaning of a sentence. So one is led to distinguish 1) partial terms of meaning, 2) rules of meaning, 3) formal terms of meaning, and 4) full terms of meaning.

The full term of meaning is what is affirmed or denied.

The formal term of meaning is what could be affirmed or denied but, in fact, is merely supposed or considered.

The partial term of meaning is what is meant by a word or by a phrase.

Rules of meaning govern the coalescence of words and phrases into the complete sense that may be supposed or considered, affirmed or denied.

There results at once a particular case of the virtually unconditioned. A formal term of meaning provides the conditioned.

The definitions of its partial terms provide the fulfilling conditions. And the rules of meaning provide the link between the conditions and the conditioned. Such propositions are bermed anglytic.

Thus, if A is defined by a relation, E, to B, and B; is defined by the expected relation, R', to A, then by the rules of meaning it follows that there cannot be an A without the relation, R, to B, and that there cannot be a B wit out the relation, R', to A. Such conclusions that weak on definitions and rules of meaning are analytic propositions.

Fourthly, since the analytic proposition is an instance of the virtually unconditioned, reflective understanding will find in it its proper object and thereby ground a judgment. There then arises a further qualities. That precisely is the meaning or force or implication of such a judgment?

It would seen that its meaning is not assertoric but hypothetical. If there occur suppositions or judgments containing sigmificant terms in the same sense as they are assigned in the analytic proposition, then such suppositions or judgments must be consistent with the analytic proposition: moreover, when that condition and other logical requirements are met, there follor valid inferences. On the other hand, the mere fact that a proposition is analytic offers no guarantee that its terms in their defined sense occur in any supposition or judgment apart from the affirmation of the analytic proposition.

O

0

О

It follows that analytic propositions remain in starile isolation unless there accrues to them some form of validation. This will consist in the occurrence of iso them in their defined

О

- 55 -

sense in some other supposition or Jadgment; and the procise nature of the validation vill depend upon the nature of the added supposition or judgment.

There also follows the explanation of the fact that adalytic propositions can be produced more or loss at will and indefinitely. Partial terms of meaning are a vast multitude and further partial terms can be supplied by the art of definition. Foles of meaning provide a principle of selection of the partial terms that will coalesce into analytic propositions. And if this seems to require too much insensity, the task can be simplified by using symbols instead of words and by defining them by their relations in propositions. But simificant increments of knowledge are not to be obtained by more ingenuity and, in fact, the analytic proposition, by itself, is not a significant increment of knowledge: without the fulfilteent of further coaditions it remains in isolation and fuils to enter fruitfully into the texture of knowledge.

Hence, e are in substantial acrossent with the contemporary view that more analytic propositions are <u>many</u> tautologies. The use of the term, tautology, would seem to be incorrect, but the general measing of the statement is sound. However, it may not be out of elace to add that the present point was mide centuries ago. Aquinas advanced that conclusions depend upon principles, that principles depend upon their terms; but he was not ready to accept any terms whatever; he added that proper terms are selected by wisdom (I-II, 66, 5, 4m) and by wisdom he meant an accumulation of insights that atomis to the universe as compon sense stands to the domain of the particular, incidental, relative, and imaginable.

0

O

O

С

Sum. Theal. I.T. J. Ho, a. S. ad Am.

Let us now turn from analytic propositions to analytic principles.

By analytic principle is meant an analytic proposition of 4 which the partial terms are existential; further, the partial terms of an analytic proposition are existential if they occur in their defined sense in judgments of fact, such as the concrete judgment of fact or the definitively established empirical generalization.

Further, since such analytic principles are hard to come by, we shall also speak of two mitigated cases.

The provisional analytic principle is an analytic proposition of which the terms are probably existential, that is, they occur in probable empirical generalizations.

The serial analytic principle is an analytic proposition of which the terms are socially existential; what is meant by the serially existential, will be clarified in our next section on mathematical judgments.

It may be remarked that the analytic principle also connotes in its terms not only an existential reference but also a basic, primitive character. I think this feature will be found to follow from the defined requirements for, as we shall proceed to argue, analytic principles lie pretty well outside the reach of common sense and empirical science.

0

О

C

They lie outside the reach of common sense because analytic principles are universal and common sense regards the particular. Common sense makes concrete judgments of fact and it passes judgment on the correctness of insights into concrete situations.

0

- 57 -

(510) 4

But in neither case does it employ terms in the sense assigned them by abstract definitions. As Bourates discovered, the average man does not define the is suspicious of the search for definitions; and when that pursuit brings out the inference that he does not know what he is talking about, he is rather reseatful.

The fact would seem to be that the structure of common sense meanings is much the same as the structure of correct sense icself. There is a communal collaboration that yields a helitual core of unlerstanding and , as eall, a range of concepts and linguistic terms in ordinary use. But just us the common core of understanding has to be a usted by complementary inrights into the present, concrete situation before judgment occurs, so also common concepts and terms receive their ultimate complement; of meaning from those complementary insights.

"This is a dog". "What do you mean by a "Sog" ?"; The question supposes that the term, "dog" has a precise meaning outside the series of statements in which it occurs. But in fact what comes first is the series of statements and what comes only later, and then only if one goes in for analysis, is the determination of the precise meaning of the single, partial term. What the average man means by a "dog" is 1) what he would with certainty pronouce to be a dog in any concrete situation with which he is familiar, 2) what he could learn to be to a "dog", and 3) what he would be willing to believe is a "dog". Hence, it is that a dictionary is constructed, not by the Socratic art of definition, but by the pedestrian, inductive procees of listing sentences in match

- 58

0

Ø

It may be objected that one cannot make a brick house without first making bricks. But one is only arguing from a false analogy if one claims that the mind develops in the same fashion as the wall of a house is built. Prior to concepts there are insights. A single insight is expressed only by uttering several concepts. They are uttered in conjunction, and reflection pronounces whether the insight and so the conjunction is correct. The isolation and definition of concepts is a subsequent procedure and common sense does not undertake it.

Because we have destable that common sense reaches analytic principles, it is not to be inferred that the average man has no principles. Analytic principles suppose analysis; analysis supposes accurate conceptualization. But prior to analysis, to concepts, to judgments, there are the native endowments of intelligence and reasonableness and the inherent structures of cognitional process. These are the real principles on which the rest depends. Foreover. all understaiding has its universal appect, for similars are similarly understood. But it is one thing to exploit this universal aspoct in a professional manner; it is another to exploit the intelligibility, which is by itself universal, by adding further intelligibilities until one comes to grips with concrete situations. The latter line of development we have named common sense so that, by definition, common sense deals with the particular. Again, the latter line of development is conspicuous in the average man. But what else the average man knows and how he knows it, are further questions. As has been remarked already, one cannot treat all issues at the same time.

0

O

С

- 59 -

Next, analytic principles lie outside the reach of empirical science. It is true of course, that every insight yields several concepts linked together through the insight; it also is true that the empirical scientist formulates definitions, postulates, and inferences; but the trouble is that the empirical scientist knows his insights not as certainly correct but only as probable. Hence his defined terms, in the sense they defined, are as much subject to rovision as the probable judgments of fact that contain ther and validate them.

Thus, consider the assertions: 1) we ter probably is H_2O ; 2) what I mean by voter is H_2O ; 3) this water contains impurities: 4) there are two kinds of water, heavy and ordinary.

The first is an empirical conclusion. The second is a definition. The third is a concrete judgment of fact; its meaning is that this sample is mater in the sense of the empirical conclusion but it is not solely water in the sense of the definition. The fourth introduces a new basis of definition that has its ground in frash experimental work. Now both the initial definition and the later definitions yield analytic propositions, namely, that what does not satisfy certain specifications is not pure water, or it is not pure water of molecular weight eighteen, or it is not pure heavy water. doreover, none of these are merely analytic propositions; they are not the sort of thing that can be produced at will and indefinitely. On the other hand, they are not strictly analytic principles, for though their terms possess validating judgments of fact, still those judgments are subject to revision, and, indeed, the discovery of heavy mater has slready forced such a revision.

O

О

0

- 60 -

Generally one may say that the advance of empirical science is an instance of the advance of the self-correcting process of learning. But in this instance the previous insights yield correlations, definitions, and inferences. It is in terms of such formulations that are framed the further questions that will com- . plement and modify the previous insights by later incights. In Like manner the later insights receive their formulation which is presupposed by the further questions that lead to a still fuller understanding. Now in this process the successive formulations have three distinct aspects. First, they are the expression of insights that grasp the intelligible form of data; thus, they are probable contrical conclusions. Secondly, they are the precupposition of the further questions that lead to further insights; from this viewpoint they are provisional analytic principles. Thirdly, they are revised in the light of the further insights and so cease to be probable empirical conclusions and provisional analytic principles to pass into the limbo of the analytic propositions whose terms have no existential reference.

*6*13

The reader interested in further illustrations of this process will find numerous examples in Arthur Pap's "The A Priori in Physical Theory", New York, 1946.

Ø

O

C

- 61 -

MATHEMATICAL JUDGHENTS

In nathematical thought one may readily discern the difference between operations on the level of intelligence and operations on the level of reflection.

The level of incelling one is the level of discovery and invention, of entrois on and learning, of grasping problems and coving to grasp their solutions, of seeing the point made in each of a series of mathematical statements and then seeing how the successive points hang together.

The level of reflection is the complementary process of checking. One understands and not one wiches to smort whether what is understood is also correct. One has grasped the point and one asks whether it is right. One has ween how the successive steps hang together and one is out to make care that what hangs together is really compat.

Not the process of checking can be developed into an elaborand technique. What is checked becomes a thole department of mathematics. Definitions are vorked out. Postulates are added. From the definitions and postulates it is shown that all the conclusions of the department can be maded by the rigorous procedure of defactive inference.

But what is the goal of checkin? Clearly, it is to marchal the switches in the shape in which reflective understanding can grasp the virtually unconditioned and so ground rational judgment. In so far as the checking reduces conclusions to president, there thave is the virtually unconditioned of the form of deductive informate.

- 62 -

0

8.

Ο

C

C

In so far as the definitions and postulater coalecce into a solfjustifying meaning, there is the virtually unconditioned of nealytic propositions. Both of these types of the virtually unconditioned have already been considered and so, for us, the problem of methematical judgment consists in determining that else is required for such judgment.

First of all, something else 15 rechired. For if the premises of mothematical the data are analytic propositions, still not all analytic propositions is mathematical profises. Analytic propositions can be produced at all and indefinitely. But the premises of mathematical the data are to be reached only chrough the discoveries of genies and the later of learning what genius has grasped. Further, it does help on that abstrace regions of mathematics are occusionally pulled out of their cold out airy regions to become the tools of empirical hypotheses and theories and to there with such formulations the probable existential reference that they or morphism; possess. But prior to a probable existential reference that they or morphism; possible existential reference to receive the set is applied, that, then, is that is interest possibility? and that is its criteries?

Secondly, there we have to undertake an examination of machematics to determine what this further elecent is and what its crit (ion is, hat all may, then, that where is a mathematical series, that each task in the methes is a department of mathematics, that each department consists 1) of males governing and so defining operations and 2) of operations proceeding from some terms to

0

- 63 -

O

О

C

SUMMARY

Prospective judgments are propositions 1) that are the content of an act of conceiving, thinking, defining, considering, or supposing, 2) that are subjected to the question for reflection, to the critical attitude of intelligence, and 3) that thereby are constituted as the conditioned.

There is sufficient avidance for a prospective jubment when it may be grasped by reflective understanding as virtually unconditioned. Hence softieient avidance involves 1) a link of the conditioned to its conditions, and 2) the fulfilment of the conditions. These two pleasants are supplied in different meaners in different cases.

It formal inference the link is provided by the hypothetical premise. If the astecedent, then the consequent. The fulfilment is the minor premise.

In jubilisent on the correctness of ineights, the link that the insight is correct if there are no further, pertinent questions, and the fulfilment lies in the self-correcting process of learning reaching its limit in familiarity and mastery.

In judgments of fact the link is the correct insight or sub of insights and the fulfilment lies in present and/or temembered data.

In generalizations the link is the cognitional law that similars are shoil only unlectood and the fulfilment lies in such similarity that further, pertinent questions no more arise in the general case than in the correctly understood particular case.

0

- 72 -

9.

С

С

In probable judgments the link is thet insights are correct when there are no further pertirent questions and the fulfilment is some approximation of the self-correcting process of learning to its limit of familiarity and mastery.

In analytic propositions the line lies in rules of meaning that generate propositions out of partial terms of meaning and the fulfilment is supplied by the meanings or definitions of the terms.

Analytic propositions become analytic principles chen their terms are existential; and terms are existential when they occur in definitive, factual jubments.

Provisional analytic principles are analytic propositions whose terms are probably existential.

Contest and the service of the servi

Serially analytic principles are the analytic propositions from which follow the ranges of systems some of which in some fashion exist.

- 73 -

0

0

0

e

525

1

Part II: Ansight a

Chapter XI

 \mathbf{C}

О

SELF- APPIFMATION OF THE KLOPEN

It is time to turn from theory to practice. Judgment has been analyzed. Its grounds in reflective understanting have been explored. Clearly the next question is whother correct judgments occur, and the answer to it is the act of making one.

Since our study has been of cognitional process, the judgment we are best prepared to make is the self- filtration of an instance of such a process as cognitional. By the "self" is meant a concrete and intelligible unity-identity-whole. By "self-affirmation" is meant that the self both affirms and is affirmed. By "self-affirmed is characterized by such occurrences as pensing, perceiving, imagining, inquiring, understanding, formulating, reflecting, grasping the unconditioned, and affirming.

The affirmation to be made is a judgment of fact. It is not that I exist necessarily, but merely that in fact I do. It is not that I am of necessity a knower, but perely that in fact, I am. It is not that an individual performing the listed acts really does know, but merely that I perform them and that by "knowing" I mean so more than such performance.

As all judgment, self-affirmation rests upon a grasp of the unconditioned. The unconditioned is the combination of 1) a conditioned, 2) a link between the conditioned and its conditions, and, 3) the fulfilment of the conditions. The relevant conditioned

- 74

526 ;

is the statement, I am a knower. The link between the conditioned and its conditions may be cast in the proposition, I am a knower, if I am a concrete and intelligible unity-identity-whole, characterized by acts of sensing, perceiving, imagining, inquiring, understanding, formulating, reflecting, grasping the unconditioned, and judging. The fulfilment of the conditions is given in consciousness.

The conditioned offers no difficulty. It is merely the expression of what is to be affirmed. Similarly, the link offers no difficulty: the link itself is a statement of meaning; and the conditions which it lists have become familiar in the course of this investigation. The problematic element, then, lies in the fulfilment of the conditions and we proceed to indicate what is meant and not meant by consciousness and by the fulfilment of conditions. The holor of Consciousness

First, consciousness is not to be thought of as some sort of inward look. People are apt to think of knowing by imagining a man taking a look at something and, further, they are apt to think of consciousness by imagining themselves looking into themselves. Not merely do they indulge in such imaginative opinions but also they are likely to justify them by argument. Knowing, they will say, is knowing something: it is being confronted by an object: it is the strenge, mysterious, irreducible presence of one thing to another. Hence, though knowing is not exclusively a matter of ocular vision, still it is radically that sort of thing. It is gazing, intuiting, contemplating. Whatever words you care to employ, consciousness is a knowing and so it is some sort of inward looking.

(521) 3

Not while consciousness is a factor in knowing, and while knowing is an activity to which a problem of objectivity is enached, still it is one thing to give an account of the activity and it is something else to tackle the problem of objectivity. For the precent we are concerned simply with an account of the activity, and so we have defined the knower, not by maying that he knowe something, but solely by saying that he performs contain kinds of acts. In like tender, we have not asked whether the knower something, but solely by saying that he performs contain kinds of acts. In like tender, we have not asked whether the knower shows himself: we ask solely whether he can perform the act of celf-affirmation. Hence, while some of our readers may pos ass the rather remarkable power of looking into themselves and intuiting things quite clearly and distinctly, we shall not base our case upon their success. For, after all, there may call exist other, readers that, provide the writer, and find that looking into the base bur case while whether is the writer, and find that looking into the success yields remains the writer, and find that looking into the success yields remains

Shoully, by contributions of we shall meanly that there is an awareness formanent in cognitional acts. Already a distinction has been drawn between act and content, for instance, between spring and color, hearing and sound, imagining and image, insight and idea. To affirm consciousness is to affirm that cognitional process is not merely a procession of contents but also a succession of acts. It is to affirm that the acts differ radically from such unconscious acts as the metabolism of one's cells, the maintonance of one's organs, the multitudinous biological processes that one learns about through the study of contemporary medical cience. Both kinds of acts occur, but the biological occur outside consciousness, and the cognitional occur within consciousness. Seeing is not merely

a response to the stimulus of color and shape: it is a response that consists in becoming aware of color and shape. Houring is not merely a response to the stimulus sound: it is a response that consists in becoming aware of sound. As color differs from sound, so seeing differs from hearing. Still seeing and hearing have a common feature, for in both occurrences there is not merely content but also conscious act.

By the conscious act is not meant a deliberate act; we are conscious of acts without debating whether we will perform them. By the conscious act is not meant an act to which one attends; consciousness can be heightened by shifting attention from the content to the act; but consciousness is not constituted by that shift of attention, for it is a quality immanent in acts of certain kinds, and without it the acts would be unconscious as the growth of one's beard. By the conscious act is meant that the act is somehow isolated for inspection, nor that one grasps its function in cognitional process, nor that one can assign it a name, nor that one can distinguish it from other acts, nor that one is certain of its occurrence.

Does, then, "conscious act" mean no more than "cognitional act"? A distinction has to be drawn. First, I do not think that only cognitional acts are conscious. Secondly, there are those that would define "seeing" as "awareness of color" and then proceed to argue that in seeing one was aware of color but of nothing else whatever, that "awareness of color" occurs but that a concomitant "awareness of awareness" is a fiction. This, I think, does not accurately reflect the facts. If seeing is an awareness of nothing

- 77 -

but color and hearing is an awareness of nothing but sound, why are both named "awareness"? Is it because there is some similarity between color and sound? Or is it that color and sound are disparate, yet with respect to both there are acts that are similar? In the latter case, what is the similarity? Is it that both acts are occurrences, as metabolism is an occurrence? Or is it that both acts are conscious? One may quarrel with the phrese, awareness of awareness, particularly if one imagines awareness to be a looking and finds it preposterous to talk about looking at a look. But one cannot deny that, within the cognitional act as it occurs, there is a factor or element or component over and above its content, and that this factor is what differentiates cognition-

al acts from unconscious geovernances.

O

Empirical, Intelligent, and Rational Consciences. Potenties By conclousness is maint on avareness inconent in conditions, acts. But such acts differ in kind, and so the awareness diffors in kind with the acts. There is an expirical consciousness characteristic of sensing, perceiving, imagining. As the content of these acts is usealy presented or represented, so the awareness immenent in the acts is the mere givenness of the acts. But there is an intelligent consciousness characteristic of inquiry, insight, and formulation. On this level cognitional process not merely strives for and reaches the intelligible, but in doing so it exhibits its intelligence; it operates intelligently. The awareness is present but it is the awareness of intelligence, of what strives to understand, of what is matisfied by understanding, of what formulates the understood, not as a school aboy repeating by rote a definition, but as one that defines because he grasps why

- 78 -

(530)

that definition hits things off. Finally, on the third level of r flection, grasp of the unconditioned, and industry, there is rational consciousness. It is the emergence and the effective operation of a single law of utnost generality, the law of sufficient reason, where the sufficient reason is the unconditioned. It emerges as a depend for the unconditioned and a refusal to assent unreservedly on any lesser ground. It advances to grasp of the unconditioned. It terminates in the rational compulsion by which grasp of the unconditioned yterlaw, assent.

Empirical consciousness needs, perhaps, no further comment, for by it we illustrated the difference between conscious and unconncious acts. Intelligent and rational consciousness, on the other hand, may be clarified by a contrast. In their different manners both common sense and positive sei nee view the material world as subject to intulligible patterns and as governed by some les of canality. To confine our strention to what and knows best, namely, his own artefacts, there is discornible in them an intelligible design and their existence has it: ground in the labor of production. But before the decign is realized in things, it was invented by intable meet before the sequence of productive operations was undertaken, it was affirmed as worth while for some sufficient or apparently sufficient reason. In the thing there is the intelligible design, but in the inventor there was not only the intelligibility on the side of the object but also intelligent consciousness on the side of the subject. In the thing there is the groundedness that consists in its existence being accounted for by a sequence of operations; but in the entropreneur there was

- 79 -

ര

not only the groundedness of his judgment in the reasons that led to it but also the rational conclourness that required reactor to where Jugg ant. Intelligence and intelligibility are the obvorse and reverse of the second level of knowing; intelligence looks for intelligible patterns in presentations and representations; it graops such petterno in its nomente of insight; it exploits such grasp in its formulations and in further operations equally gnided by inclusts. In like sunder, reasonableness and groundedness are the obverse and reverse of the third level of knowing. Reasonableness is reflection inserved as it seeks groundadness for objects of thought: respirableness discovers groundedness in its reflective grasp of the unconditioned; recomblements exploits groundedness when it affirms objects because they are grounded. In ments artefacts there are the reverse elements of the intelligibility and ground doess, but there are not the obverse elements of intelligence and reasonableness. The obverse elements pertain to cognitional process on its second and third levels; they do not pertain to the contents everyont on those levels, to the idea or conclust, to the inconditioned or affirmed; on the contrary, they disrectorize the acts with which those contents are coupled and so they are specific lifferentiations of the avareness of conceiousness. Clear and distinct conception not only reveals the intelligivility of the object but also manifests the intelligence of the subject. Exact and balanced judgment not only offirms things as shey are but also testifies to the dominance of ranges blevess in the subject.

Still, it may be asked, Am I really conscious of intelligence

- 80 -

and reasonableness? The question, I think, is misleading. It suggests that there is a type of knowing in which intelligence and reaconableness come up for inspection. But what is asserted is not that you can uncover intelligence by introspection, as you can point to Calcutta on a map. The assertion is that you have conscious states and conscious acts that are intelligent and reasonable. Intelligent and rational consciousness lenote characters of cognitional process, and the charactors they denote pertain not to the contents but to the proceeding. It is repugnant to me to place astrology and estronomy, alchemy and chemistry, legent and history, hypothesis and fact, on exactly the same footing. I am not content with theories, however brilliantly coherent, but insist on raising the further question, Are they true?, That is that repugnance, that discontent, that insistance? They are just so many variations on the more basic expression that I am rationally conscious, that I demand sufficient reason, that I find it in the unconditioned, that I assent unreservedly to nothing less, that such domanding, finding, self-committing occur, not like the growth of my hair, but within a field of conveiousness or avareness. Again, if at moments I can slip into a lotus land in which mere presentations and representations are juxtaposed or successive, still that is not my normal state. The Humean world of more impressions comes to me as a puzzle to be pieced together. I want to understand, to grasp intelligible unities and relations, to know what's up and where I stand. Praise of the scientific spirit that inquires, that masters, that controls, is not without an echo, a deep resonance within me, for, in my more modest way, I too, inquire and catch on,

- 81 -

18 🙆 A

see the thing to do and seavthat it is properly done. But what are those but variations on the more basic expression that I am intelligently conveious, that the avaraness characteristic of cognitional acts on the second level is an active contributing to the intelligibility of its products? Vnon I listen to the story of Archimedes ad theal I read the recital of a mystical experience, there is a morie difference. What a mystic - experiences. I do not know. But, though I never enjoyed so reactivable . an ineight as Archimedos, still I do know what it is to miss the bolist and to not the point, not to have a clue and then to eatch on; to see things in a new light, to grasp how they hang together, to cove to know why, the reason, the explanation, the cause. After Acchimedes should "I've got it", he might well be puzzled by the question whether he doe conceious of an insight. Still there can he no doubt that he was conscious of an increment of knowledge, an increment that he had wanted very much. Did he cant the king's favor? Did he ment to enhance his reputation? Perhaps, but at a deeper and more spontaneous level, he manted to know how to do something; he canted to solve a problem; he wanted to understand; his conneiousness was on the second level where it seeks the intelligible and follows up partial incidents with further questions until there comes the final crowning insight that ends questioning and satisfies intelligent consciousness.

С

3. The Unity of Concoursess. In the fourth duse, there are unities of consciousness. Besiles conditional contents there are cognitional acts; different kinds of dets have different kinds of avareness, expirical, intelligent, rational. But the contents cumulate into unitlesiwhat

- 82 -

(534)

is perceived is what is inquired about; that is inquired about is what is understood; what is understood is that is formalling; what is formulated is what is reflected on; what is reflected on is what is grasped us unconditioned; what is grasped as unconditioned, is what is effirmed. Now, just as there are unities on the side of the object, so there are unities on the side of the subject. Conscious acts are not so many isolated, random atoms of knowing, but many acts coalesce into a single knowing. Not only is there a similarity between my seeing and your hearing, incomuch as both acts are conclous; there also is an identity involved when my seeing and my hearing or your seeing and your hearing are compared. Homeover, this identity extends all along the line. Not only is the parcept included about, unlerstood, formulated, raflected on, grasped as unconditional, and affirmed, but also there is an itentity involved in perceiving, inquiring, under storting, formalating, reflecting, grasping the unconditioned, and effirzing. Indeed, consciousness is much more-obviously of this waity in diverse acts then of the diverse acts, for it is within the unity that the acts are found and distinctioned, and it is the unity that re appeal when we talk about a single field of con clousness and draw a distinction between conscious acts occurring within the field and unconscious acts occurring outside it.

One sight go forther and argue that, were the unity of consciousness not given, then it would have to be postulated. For many contents on diverse levels cuculate into a single 30 ore. But now form that occur? now can images be derived from consetions? How can images?

- 63

С

<u>535</u>

Now can definition draw upon both images and the ideas grasped in insight? Now can reflecting be about formulations? Now can the grasp of the unconditioned be obtained by combining the conditioned that is thought and the fulfilment that is sensed? How can each juigment emerge in a context of other juigments that determine its meaning, complement it, qualify it, defend it, so that it is but a single increment within a far vester knowing? I cannot inquire into your experience or reflect on your thoughts. But if there were no "I", how could there be a "my experience" with respect to which a "my inquiry " occurred, or "my thoughts" with respect to which imy reflection" occurred? If there were not one consciousness, at once empirical, intelligent, and rational, how could rational judgment proceed from an unconditioned grasped in the combination of thought and sensible experience? The Unity Ab Green

Still, if the unity of consciousness would have to be postulated on the hypothesis that it were not given, it remains that it is given. By this, of course, I do not mean that it is the object of some inward look. What is meant is that a single agent is involved in many acts, that it is an abstraction to speak of the acts as conscious, that concretely, consciousness pertains to the acting agent. Seeing and hearing differ inasmuch as one is an awareness of color and the other an awareness of sound. Seeing and hearing are similar inasmuch as each is an awareness. But the similarity between my seeing and your hearing is an abstract indication of consciousness which, as it is given, is primarily an identity uniting my seeing and mearing or your seeing and your hearing.

4

O

Wo have been engaged in determining what precisely is

- 84 -

(536)12

meant by consciousness. We have contended that it is not some inward look but a quality of cognitional acts, a quality that differs on the different levels of cognitional process, a quality that concretely is the identity immoment in the diversity and the multiplicity of the process. However, one cannot insist too strongly that such an account of consciousness is not itself consciousness. The account supposes consciousness as its data for inquiry, for insight, for formulation, for reflection, for grasp of the unconditioned, for judgment. But giving the account is the formulating and the judging, while the account itself is what is formulated and affirmed. Consciousness as given is neither formulated nor affirmed. Consciousness is given independently of its being formulated or affirmed. To formulate it does not make one more conscious, for the effect of formulation is to add to one's concepts. To affirm it, does not make one more conscious, for the effect of affirmation is to add to one's jugments. Finally, as consciousness is not increased by offirming it, so it is not diminiched by denying it. for the effect of denying it is to add to the list of one's judgments and not to subtract from the grounds on which judgments may be based.

By such experiential fulfilment, then, one does not mean the conditioned, nor the link between the conditioned and its conditions, nor the conditions as formulated, let alone as affirmed. One does mean that the conditions, which are formulated, also are to be found in a more rudimentary state within cognitional process. Just as inquiry brings about the advance from the perceived and not understood to the perceived and understood, so there is a reverse

- 85 -

(537)

shift by which one moves from the perceived and understood to the movely perceived. It is this reverse shift that commonly is meant by verification. If from a more general theory I obtain the formula, PV = 64, then 1 can infer that when P is 2, 4, 3, 16, 32, V will have theoretically the values 32, 16, 8, 4, 2. By setting up suitable apparatus and securing appropriate conditions defined by the theory, I can advance from theoretical inference to an experimental check. The results of the experiment may be expressed in a series of propositions, such as the statement that, when P was approximately 2, V was approximately 32, but such a series of statements, however, accurate, is not what was given by the experiment. The statements represent judgments of fact; the jugments rest on grasping the unconditioned; the grasp rests on formulations and visual experiences. The experiment gives not statements nor judgments nor reflective understanding nor formulations but only visual experiences. The experiment gives not visual experiences as described but visual experiences on the level of morely seeing. That P is 2 when the needle on a dial stands at a certain place, is a judgment. That V is 32 when certain dimensions of an object coincide with certain dimensions of a measuring rod is another judgment. All that is seen, is the needle in a position on the dial and dimensions of an object standing in coincidence with numbered units on a rod. Nor is it this description that is seen, but only what is so described. In brief, verification is an appropriate pathern of acts of checking; acts of checking are reversals from formulations of what would be perceived to the corresponding but more rudimentary cognitional contents of acts of percoiving or

86 -

С

О

sensing. In the formulation there always are elements derived from inquiry, insight, conceiving. But <u>invirtue</u> of the checking one can say that the formulation is not pure theory, that it is not merely supposed or merely postulated or merely inferred, that its sensible component is given.

Now just as there is reversal to what is given sensibly. so there is reversel to what is given consciously, Just as the former reversal is away from the understood as understood, the formulatel as formulated, the affirmed as affirmed, and to the merely sensed, so also the latter reversal is from the understood, formulated, affirmed as such, to the merely given. Hence, in the self-affirmation of the knower, the conditioned is the statement, I am a knower. The link between the conditioned and its conditions is cast in the proposition, I am a knower if I am a unity performing certain winds of acts. The conditions as formulated are the unity-identity-whole to be grasped in data as individual and the kinds of acts to be grasped in data as similar. But the fulfilment of the conditions in consciousness is to be had by reverting from such formulations to the more rudimentary state of the formulated where there is no formulation but merely experience. Self. Offermation From preliminary clarifications, we turn to the issue. A w I a shower? Data has to ask the question of himself. But anyone who asks it, is rationally conscious. For the question is a question for reflection, a question to be met with a "Yes" or "No"; and asking the question does not mean repeating the words but entering the dynamic state in which dissatisfaction with mere theory manifests itself in a demand for fact, for what is so. Further,

- 87 -

С

15

the question is not any question. If I ask it, I know what it means. What do I mean by I? The answer is difficult to formulate, but strangely, in some obscure fashion, I know very well what it means without formulation, and by that obscure yet familiar awareness. I find fault with various formulations of what is meant by "I". In other words, "I" has a rudimentary meaning from consciousness and it envisages, wat the multiplicity nor the diversity of contents and conscious acts but rather the unity that goes along with them. But if "I" has some such rudimentary meaning from consciousness, then consciousness supplies the fulfilment of one element in the conditions for affirming that I am a knower. Does consciousness supply the fulfilment for the other conditions? Do I see, or am I blind? Do I hear, or am I deaf? Do I try to understand or is the distinction between intelligence and stabidity no more applicable to me than to a stone? Have I any experience of insight, or is the story of Archimedes as strange to me as the account of Plotinus' vision of the One? Do I conceive, think, consider, suppose, define, formulate, or is my talking like the talking of a parrot? I reflect, for I ask whether I am a knower. Do 1 grasp the unconditioned, if not in other instances, then in this one? If I grasped the unconditioned, would I not be under the rational compulsion of affirming that I am and so, either affirm it, or else find some loophole, some weakness, some incoherence, in this account of the genesis of self-affirmation? As each has to ask those questions of himself, so too, he has to answer them for himsolf. But the fact of the asking and the possibility of

- 88 -

O

the answering are themselves the sufficient reason for the

16

affirmative answer. 6. See affirmation to Animament Law. The foregoing account of self-affirmation stresses its

positive conect. It is a julcment of fact and so it rests heavily upon the experiential component in knowing. Still it is a singular type of judgment for it possesses a variety of overtones. I might not be, yet if I am, I am. I might be other than I am, yet, in fact, I am what I am. The contingent, if you suppose it as a fact, becomes conditionally necessary, and this piece of elementary logic places the merely factual self-affirmation in a context of necessity.

Am I a knower? The answer, Yes, is # coherent, for if I am a knower, I can know that fact. But the answer, No, is incoherent, for if I am not a knower, how could the question be raised and answered by me? No less, the hedging answer, I do not know, is incoherent. For if I know that I do not know, then I am a knower: and if I do not know that I do not know, then I should not answer.

Am I a knower? If I am not, then I know nothing. My only course is silence. My only course is not the excused and explained silence of the skeptic, but the complete silence of the animal that offers neither excuse nor explanation for his completent absorption in merely sensitive routines. For if I know pothing, I do not know excuses for not knowing. If I know nothing, then I cannot know the explanation of my ignorance.

It is this conditional necessity of contingent fact that involves the talking skeptic in contradiction. If enthusiasm for the achievement of Freud were to lead me to affirm all thought

- 89 -

C

and affirmation is just a by-product of the libido, then since I have admitted no exceptions, this very assertion of mina; would have to be mere assertion from a suspect source. If second thoughts lead me to acknowledge an exception, they lead me to acknowledge the necessary presuppositions of the exception. By the time that list has been drawn up and accepted, I am no longer a skeptic.

Still the Aristotelian prescription of getting the skeptic to talk, derives its efficacy not only from the conditional necessity of contingent fact but also from the nature, the natural spontaneities and natural inevitabilities, that go with that fact. Why is it that the talking skeptic does not talk gibberish? Why is it that one can count on his being nonplussed by self-contradiction? It is because he is conscious, empirically, intelligently, and rationally. It is because he has no choice in the matier. It is because extreme intervity is needed for him not to betray his real nature. It is because, were his ingenuity successful, the only result would be that he had rowealed hisself an idiot and lost all claim to be heard.

This aspect of the matter deserves further attention. Cognitional process does not lie outside the realm of natural law. Not merely do I possess the power to elicit certain types of acts when certain conditions are fulfilled, but also all statistical regularity the conditions are fulfilled and the acts occur. I cennot escape sensations, percepts, incress. All three keep occurring during my waking hours, and the images often continue during my sleep. No dou't, I can exercise a selective control over what I sense, perceive, imagine. But the choice I cannot make effective

- 90 -

O

С

is to sense nothing, marrily anothing, imagine nothing, Not only are the contents of traise acts imposed upon me, but also even clousness in some degree in inseparable from the acts. Nor in that consciousness merely an aggregate of isolated acous; it is a unity.

If I cannot escape presentations and representations, neighbor can I be content with the Spontaneously I fall victim to shouthe wonder that Aristotle nexed the beginning of all science and philosophy. I try to understand. I enter, without questioning, the dynamic state that is revealed is questions for intelligence. Theoretically there is a disjunction between "being intelligent" and "not being intelligenc". But the theoretical disjunction is not a practical choice for me. I can depresate intelligence; I can ridiculy its aspirations; I can relue a its use to a minimum; but it does not follow that I can eliminate it. I can question everything else, but to question questionging is self-destructive. I might call upon intally me for the conception of a plan to escape intelligence, but the affort to escape would only rowal my prisent involvement and, strangely enough, I would want to go about the buliness intelligently and I would sunt to claim that escaping was the intelligent thing to do.

As I cannot be content with the cinematographic flow of presentations and representations, so I can obly content with inquery, understanding, and formulation. I may say I want not the query but the chase, but I am careful to restrict my chasing to fields there the quarcy lies. If, above all, I want to understand, other still I want to understand the facts. Inevitably, the achievement of understanding, however, share all as rise to the further question,

- 61 -

543)19

Is it so? Inevitably, the progress of understanding is interrupted by the check of judgment. Intelligence may be a thoroughbred exulting in the race; but there is a mider on its back; and, vithout the rider, the best of horses is a poor bet. The iesistouce that modern actionce envisages as indefinite future of repeated revisions does not imply an indifference to fact. On the contrary, it is fact that will force the revisions, that will toss into the waste-basket; the brilliant theories of previous understanding, that will aske each now theory better because it is closer to the facts. But what is fact? What is that clear, preeise, definitive, irrevocable, dominant something that we name fact? The question is too large to be sattled here. Each philosophy has iss own view on what fact is and its concequent theory on the precise nature of our knowledge of fact, All that can be streppted now is to chair that as happen to mean by knowing fact. Clearly, then, flow is consulto as in sense or consciousness. Again, fact is intelligible: if it is independent of all bobtful theory, it is not independent of the solast insight and formulation necessary to give it its proclaion and its accuracy. Finally, fact is virtually unconditioned: it might not have been; it might have been other than it was: but as things stand, it possesses conditional necessity, and nothing can possibly alter it now. Each, then, combined the concreteness of experience, the determinateness of accurate intelligence, and the absolutoness of rational judgment. It is the natural objective of hegas cognitional provess. It is the anticipated unity to shich sensation. perception, instination, inquiry, insight, formulation, reflection,

- 92 -

С

n an the second seco

grasp of the unconditioned, and judgment make their several, complementary contributions. When Newton knew that the water in his backet was rotating, he knew a fact, though he thought he knew absolute space. When quantum mechanics and relativity posit the unimaginable in a four-dimensional manifold, they bring to light the not too supprising fact that scientific intelligence and verifying judement go beyond the realm of imagination to the realm of thet. Just that that realm is, as has been said, is a difficult and complicated problem. Our present concern is that we are committed to it. We are committed, not by knowing what it is and that it is worth while, but by an inability to avoid experience, by the subtle conquest in us of the Bros that would understand, by the inevitable aftermath of that sweet adventure when a rationality identical with us demands the absolute, re-Cuses unreserved ascent to less than the unconditioned and, when that is attained, imposes upon us a commitment in which we bow to an immanent Anagke Confronted with the standard of the unconditioned, the skeptic despairs. Set before it, the products of human understanding are ashamed. Great are the achievements of modern science; by far are they to be preferred to earlier guesswork; yet rational consciousness finds that they approximate indeed to the unconditioned but to not attain it; and so it assigns them the modest status of probability, Still, if cational conveiousness can criticize the achievement of science, it cannot criticize itself. The critical spirit can weigh all else in the balance, only on condition that it does not criticize itself. It is a selfassertive spontaneity that demands sufficient reason for allelse

0

but offers no justification for its demanding. It arises, fact-like, to generate knowledge of fact, to push the cognitional process from the conditioned structures of intelligence to unreserved affirmation of the unconditioned. It occurs. It will recur whenever the conditions for colloction are fulfilled. With statistical regularity those conductions keep being fulfilled. Nor is that all, for I am involved, engaged, committed. The disjunction between rationality and non-rationality is an abstract alternative but not a concrete choice. Rationality is my very dignity, and so closely to it do I cling, that I would want the best of reasons for abandoning it. Indeed, I am so much one with my reasonableness that, when I lapse from its high standards, I am compelled either to repent my folly or to rationalize it.

Self-affirmation has been considered as a concrete judgment of flot. The contradiction of self-negation has been indicited. Behind that contradiction there have been discorned natural inevitabilities and spontaneities that constitute the possibility of knowing, not by demonstrating that one can know, but pragmatically by engaging one in the process. For in the last resort can one reach a desper four action than that pragmatic engagement. Even to seek it involves a vicious circle; for if one seeks such a foundation, one employs one's cognitional process; and the foundation to be reached will be no more secure or solid than the inquiry utilized to reach it. As I might not be, as I might be other than I am, so my knowing might not be and it might be other than it is. The ultimate basis of our knowing is not necessity but contingent fact, and the fact is established, not prior to our engagement in knowing, but simultaneously with it. The skeptic, then, is not in-

С

О

- 94 -

volved in a conflict with absolute necessity. He might not be; he might not be a known. Contradiction arises when he utilizes

7 Description + Explanation

Description * Tiplanation There is a further aspect to the matter. Is the self-affirmation that has been outlined decorriptive of the thing-for-us or explanatory of the thing-itself? We have soblem of natural inevitabilities and spontaneities. But did we speak of these as they are themselves or as they are for us?

Unfortunately, there is a prior question. The distinction that was drawn, earlier, between description and explanation was couched in terms that sufficed to cover the difference in the fields of positive ocience. But human science contains an element not to be found in other departments. Both the study of man and the study of nature bogin from inquiry and insight into sensible data. Both the study of man and the study of nature can advance from the descriptive valations of the object to the inquirer, to the explanatory relations that obtain immediately between objects. Just as the physicist measures, correlates measurements, and implicitly defines correlatives by the correlations, so too, the student of human nature can forsake the literary approach to determine economic, political, sociological, cultural, historical correlations. But the study of man also enjoys through consciousness an immediate access to man, and this access can be used in two manners. File initial use is descriptive. In this fashion we begun from an account of an event named insight. We pointed out that it was satisfying, that it erme unexpectedly, that its emergence was conditioned more by dynamic inner state of inquiry than by external

О

circumstance, that while the first emergence was difficult, repeated occurrence was easy and spontaneous, that single acts of insight accumulate into clusters bearing on a single topic, that such clusters may remain without exact formulation, or may be worked out into a systematic doctrine. Naturally enough, this general description of insight was presupposed and utilized when we care to examine it more closely; and this closer examination was in turn presupposed in our account of explanatory abstraction and explanatory system and in our study of empirical method. Moreover, since data, percepts, and images are prior to inquiry, insight. and formulation, and since all definition is subsequent to inquiry and insight, it was necessary to define data, percepts, and images as the matorials presupposed and complemented by inquiry and insight and, further, it was necessary to distinguish between them by contrasting the formulations of empirical science with those of mathematics and the formulations of both of these with the formulations of common sense. Finally, the analysis of judgment and the account of reflective understanding consisted in relating these acts to each other, and to the formulations of understanding, and to the fulfilment provided by experience.

As the reader will discern, the initial procedure of description gradually yielded to definition by relation; and the defining relations obtained immediately between different kinds of cognitional state or act. But definition by this type of relation is explanatory, and so descriptive procedure was superseded by explanatory.

There are, then, two types of description and two types of

0

- 96 -

(548) 24

the inquirer explanation. If one starts from the data of searce, one begins by describing but goes on to as duin. Again, if one starts from the data of consciousness, any begins by describing and goes to explain. Still, there is an important difference between the two types of explaining. For explanation on the basis of searce can reduce the element of hypothesis to a minimum but it cannot eliminate it entirely. For explanation on the basis of consciousness can escape outled; the series supported, the merely inferred.

First, apple at on the basis of same can relace hypothesis to a minimum. This, of course, is the point of the principle of relevance. Galileo's law of falling bodies does not merely suppose or postulate distance or time or the measurements of either. It does not maraly suppose or postulate the courdistion between distance and tite; for there is some relation between the two inasmuch as a falling body falls farther in a longer tive; and the actes1 messurements ground a numerical dependination of that relation. Corpover, what holds for the law of falling bodies, bolis for the other large of mechanics. If one places, one may contend that the use of lequiny, insight, forculation, and concequent genevolization, is mere suprosition or care postulation: but at least it is not the byte of ever apportion that the empirical scientist systemutically avoids or that he carlously fears will be eliminated in some more intelligent wethod of inquiry to be devised and accepted in the future. To peach the element of more supposition that makes may system of mechanics subject to future revision. one wast shift attention from single laws to the set of primitive

- 97 -

0

0

C

terms and relations which the system employs in formulationg all its laws. In other words, one has to distinguish between, say, mass as defined by correlations between masses and, on the other hand, mass as enjoying the position of an ultimate mechanical concept. Any future system of mechanics will have to satisfy the data that now are covered by the notion of mass. But it is not necessary that every future system of mechanics will have to satisfy the same data by employing our concept of mass. Further developments might laad to the introduction of a different set of ultimate concepts, to a consequent reformulation of all laws, and so to a dethronement of the notion of mais from its present position as an ultimate of mechanical system. Hence, while empirical method con reduce the hypothetical to a minimum, it cannot eliminate it entirely. Its concepts as concepts are not hypothetical, for they are defined inclicitly by expirically established correlations. None the less, its concepts as systematically significant, as ultimate or devived, as preferred to other concepts that might be empirically reached, do involve an element of mere supposition. For the selection of certain concepts as ultimate occurs in the work of systematization, and that work is provisional. At any time, a system is accepted because it provides the simplest account of all the known facts. For at the same time it is acknowledged that there may be unknown yet relevant facts, that they might give rise to further questions that would lead to further insights, and that the further issights eight involve a radical revision of the accepted system.

Secondly, explanation on the basis of consciousness can escape this limitation. I do not mean, of course, that such

0

- 98 -

0

O

explanation is not to be reached through the series of revisions involved in the self-correcting process of learning. Nor do I mean that, once explanation is reached, there remains no possibility of the minor revisions that leave besic lines intect but attein a greater exactitudey and a greater fullness of detail. Again, I am not contending her , downshows, that husen nature and so human knowledge are in utable, that there could not arise a new nature and a new keepindge to which present theory would not be applicable. What is excluded is the vadical revision that involves a shift in the fundamental terms and relations of the explanatory account of the human knowledge underlying existing compon scase, mathematics and empirical

sciencą.

G

С

C

The impossibility of Revision appears from the very notion of revision. A revision appeals to data. It contends that privious theory does not satisfactorily account for all the data. It claims to have reached complementary insights that lead to more accurate statements. It shows that these new statements either are unconditioned or more closely approximate to the unconditioned than previous statements. Now, if in fact, revision is, as described, then it presupposes that cognitional process falls on the three levels of presentation, intelligence, and reflection; it presupposes that insights are cumulative and complementary; it presupposes that they head towards a light described by the adjective, satisfactory; it presupposes a reflective grasp of the unconditioned or of what approximates to the unconditioned. Clearly. revision cannot revise its own presuppositions. A reviser cannot appeal to data to dear data, to his new insights to deny insights.

- 99 -

to his new formulation to deny formulation, to his reflective grasp to deny reflective grasp.

The same point may be put in another menner. Popular relativism is prome to argue that empirical science is the most reliable form of human knowledge: but empirical actionce is subject to indefinite revision: therefore, all human knowledge is equally subject to indefinite revision. Now such argument is necessarily fallacions. One must definitely know invariant features of human showledge before one can assert that empirical science is subject to indefinite revision; and if one definitely knows invariant features of human knowledge, then one knows what is not subject to revision. Moreover, as is obvious, such knowledge surpasses empirical science at least in the respect that it is not

subject to revision. Self-Affirmation in the Possibility of Judgments of Fast. The same constraints be reached by setting forth the

<u>a priori</u> conditions of any possible judgment of fact. For any such judgment can be represented by a "Yes" or "No" in answer to a question, Is it so? The snewer will be rational, that is, it will rost on known sufficient reason. Moreover, the answer will be absolute; "Yes" utterly excludes "No"; and "No" utterly excludes "Yes". Hence, since the known sufficient reason for an absolute answer must itself be absolute and anown, the "Yes" or "No" must rest on some apprehension or grasp of the unconditioned. Now the judgment of fact is not to the effect that something must be so or could not be otherwise; it merely states that something is so; hence the unconditioned that grounds it will be not formally but only virtually unconditioned. The first condition, then, of any possible judgment of fact is the grasp of 1) a conditioned,

- 100 -

0

С

റ

С

(552)28

2) a link between the conditioned and its conditions, and 3) the fulfilment of the conditions. It is such a grasp that effects the transition from the question, Is it so? to a rational, absolute answer.

But this first requirement presupposes other requirements. The "it" of the julyment of fact is not a bire "it". On the contrary, it is the could(Joned, known as conditioned, that through the fulfilment of its conditions is grasped as virtually unconditioned. Prior to the question for reflection, these must be a level of activity that yields the conditioned as conditioned, the conditioned as linked to its conditions. But this is a lovel of intelligence, of positing systematic unities and systematic relations. Moreover, . it will be a freely developing level; for without free development questions of fact would not arise. The only instances of the conditioned that would be envisaged would be instances with the conditions fulfilled. In that case the answer would always be an automatic "Yes": and if the answer were always an automatic "Yes", there solld be no need to raise any questions of fact. Still, though there is free development of systematic unities and relations, such development cannot occur in some pure isolation from the fulfilling conditions. Wate there such isolation, it would be impossible to tell shather or not conditions were fulfilled; and if that were impossible, then judgments of fact could not be ur. This yields the second condition of judgment of fact. It is a level of intellectual activity that posits systematic unities and relations 1) with some independence of a field of fulfilling conditions and 2) with reference to such a field.

- 101 -

0

С

0

O

(553)20

But this second requirement presupposes a third. There must be a field of fulfilling conditions. More exactly, since conditions are simultaneous with that they condition, there must be a orior field containing that can become fulfilling conditions. Of themselves, they will be neither conditioning nor conditioned; they will be merely given.

Finally, presibility is concrete. Logicians may say that a "mountain of gold" is possible if there is no intrinsic contradiction involved in happosing such a monatain. But, in fact, a mountain of gold is possible only if the means are available for acquiring enough gold to make a mountain, for transporting it to a single place, for heaping it up in the fashion of a mountain. an' for keeping it there long enough for the solden mountain to exist for some minimum interval of time. Similarly, any possible judgment of fact would be some concrete judgment. The conditions of its possibility include the conditions of bringing together its divorse components. There must be, then, a concrete unityidentity-whole that experiences the given, that inquires about the given to generate the free development of systematic unities and relations, that reflects upon such developments and demands the virtually unconditioned as its ground for answering "Yes" or "No". It is this concrete unity that asks, "Is it so?" It is this concrets unity that initiates the free development by asking about the given, What is this? Why is it? How often does it exist or happen? It is this concrete unity that grasps and formulates the conditioned as conditioned and that appeals to the given to grasp the virtually unconditioned and to affirm it rationally and absolutely.

Ο

O

С

- 102 -

In suger approved a contrate to the hadding of fedgements

These remains a corollary. Judgments of fact may be not only possible. They may actually occur. But if any judgment of fact occurs, there must be as well the occursence of its conditions. Hence, if there is any judgment of fact, no matter what its content, there is a concrete unity-identity-whole that experiences some given, that induires, understands, and formulates, that reflects, grasps the unconditioned, and so affirms or denies. Finally, such a concrete unity-identity-whole is a thing-itself, for it is defined by an internally related set of operations, and the relations may be experientially validated in the conscious and dynamic states: 1) of inquiry leading from the given ineight, 2) of insight leading to formulation, 3) of reflection leading from formulation to grasp of the unconditioned, and 4) of thet grasp leading to affirmation or denial.

From the corollary there results our contention. There cannot occur a revision without the occurrence of some juigment of fact. But 12 there occurs any judgment of fact, there occur the dynamic states in which may be validated experientially the relations that define the conjugate terms by which the thing-itself that knows is differentiated.

What is the source of this peculiarity of cognitional theory? It is that other theory reaches its thing-itself by turning away from the thing as related to as by sense or by consciousness, but cognitional theory reaches its thing-itself by understanding itself and affirming itself as concrete unity in a process that is conscious empirically, intelligently, and rationally.Moreover, since every other known becomes known through this

0

- 103 -

0

О

С

process, no known could impagn the process without simultaneously incompany its own status to a known. Contrast with Kentian Analycis.

10.

O

С

0

To have performed something similar to shap a Kantian would name a transcendental deduction. Accordingly, we shall be asked to explain the fact that our deduction yields different results from Kaut's.

A first difference is that Kint asked the <u>a priori</u> conditions of the possibility of experience in the sense of showing an object. We have distinguished the issues; there is the problem of objectivity, and from this to be ve carefully prescrinded not only in the present social but also in all eavlier sections; there also is the prior problem of determining just what activities are involved in Reaving, and to this prior problem to have so for confined our efforts. Hence we asked, not for the conditions of knowing an object, but for the conditions of the possible occurrence of a judgment of fact. To have asked for the conditions of an absolute and roticnel "Yes" or "No" viewed simply as an act. To have not asked on abit conditions there would be some fact that corresponded to the "Yes". We have not even raised that meaning such correspondences wight have.

A second difference lies in the distinction between thingfor-us and thing-its off. Nant distinguished these as phenomenon and nonconon. Just what he mant is a stater of dispute but, at last, it is clear that the distinction pertained to his formulation of a theory of objectivity. Moreover, it seems to be probable enough that the historical origin of the Kautian distinction is to be cought in the Neumissance distinction of primary and

- 104 -

secondary qualities there the former pertained to the real and objective things these sives while the lather pertained to the subject's apprehension of them. In any case, our distinction is neither the Senaissance oor the Kaution distinction. It is simply a distinction between description and explanation, between the kind of cognitional activities that fix contants by indicating what they resemble and, on the other hand, the kind that fix contents by assigning their experientially validated relations. A thing is a concrete onity-identity-whole grasped in data as individual, Describe it, and it is a thing-for-us. Explain it, and it is a thing-incolf. In it real? In it objective? In it say thing more than the incoment determination of the cognitional act? These are all quite reasonable questions. But as yet we answer neither "Yes" nor "No". For the collect, our answer is simply that objectivity is a highly complex issue and that he shall handle it satisfactorily only if we begin by letermining what precisely cognitional process is. No doubt, there are objections that may be urged against this procedure; but the objections too vili be hendled satisfactorily only after the prior questions are answered.

A third difference regards universal and necessary judgments. They stand in the forefront of the Kantian critique which use largely engaged in the problem of transcending Huse's experiental atomism. But in our analysis they play a since role. A universal and necessary judgment may be merely the affirmation of an analytic proposition, and such analytic propositions may be mere abstract possibilities without relevance to the central context of judgments that we name knowledge. Our emphasis falls on

 $\boldsymbol{\alpha}$

0

0

- 105 -

the judgment of first that itself is an increment of knowledge and, as well, contributed to the transition from the analytic proposition to the analytic principle, that is, to the universal and necessary judgment whose terms and colutions are existential in the sense that they occur is judgments of fact.

A fourth difference regards the immediate ground of judgwent. Knot formulated this ground by setting forthan is achemetism of the ortegories. There is a proper use of the category, Saul, if there occurs a filling of the cupty form of Tire. There is a proper use of the sublemy, Stbat Lee, 11 there is a persenence of the buil in Ciss. However, Kantle reheration is not reparted or one of his hap iest inventions. What he was brying to get hold of rug the relievenive process of chacking, of verifying, of bringing the merely conceived and the merely given into mily. In fact, that process is far tore complicated and far ... bre Averastile) than Montica analysis - all look one to suspect. Verifying supposes a vast array of lightheal propositions that at to shat would be experienced unter precisely toffaed conditions. Varifying consists in having these experiences, all of the , and apar but them, under the defined conditions. Moreover, what is verified, is what is convolved, formulated, supposed. It need have no icaplamble counterpart, and so oue can speak of verifying the theory of relativity of the affirmations of quantum mechanics. Indeed, as we have such at length, there is a single formula that covers the incertiate ground of all our julgaeuts; it is the grasp of the virtually unconditioned. So far was Kant from positing the unconditioned as the includiate ground of every judgement, that he

0

С

О

- 106 -

described it an Ideal of Pare Learon, (and) ideal that becomes observive in our knowing, not prior to jutiment and as a condition of judgment, but subsequently increased as each judgment rests on an infinite regress of prosyllogisms. As the restdery femiliar with Name, still note, our assocribes of a domand for the unconditioned as a prior ground for judgment not merely is lies that the Name analytic is carboarly incomplete but also involves in outher rule the Kentian dialectic. For the dialectic has but a single provise, namely, that since the derend for the unconditioned is not a necessary ground for judgment, therefore, (it) is a transcendental illusion; in other words, since the unconditioned is not constitutive of knowing an object in the sense of making a judgment, therefore, it has purely regulative function in our knowing. On our showing, the unconditioned is prior and constitutive; to affine a feet is to affirm an unconditioned.

A flith difference has to do with consciousness. Kent behaviological an interpreter that consistents roughly to what we have noted expirited one closeness, namely, the sworeness that is inserned in note of stating, perceiving, interlaing, desiring, fearing, and the like. Berlies this acknowledgement of inner sense, Kant deduced or postulated an original synthetic unity of apperception as the <u>spriori</u> condition of the "I think" accorpanying all cognitional acts. On the other hand, Kentian theory has no room for a consciousness of the generative principles of the categories; the extegories may be inferred from the julgments in which they never; but it is impossible to reach behind the categories to their source. It is precisely this aspect of Kantian

- 107 -

0

O

thought that gives the categories their flexibility and their irreducible mysteriorsness. It is the same aspect that provided Fichte and Hegel with their opportunity to march into the unoccupied territory of intelligent and rational consciousness. The dynamic st tes n med inquiry and reflection do occur. Inquiry is generative of all understanding, and understanding is generative of all concepts and systems. Reflection is generative of all reflective grasp of the unconditioned, and that grasp is generative of all judgment. If the Kantian proscribes consideration of inquiry and reflection, he lays himself open to the charge of obscurantism. If he admits such consideration, if he praises intelligent curiosity and the critical spirit, then he is on his way to acknowledge the generative principles both of the citegories Kadi knew and of the critical Sami did not know.

The foregoing list of differences account for the divergence between Kant's consideration, and our orm. They are differences in the problem under consideration, in the viewpoint from which it is considered, in the method by which it is solved. More fundamentally there are differences about questions of fact, for our self-affirmation is, as we have insisted and may be pardoned for repeating, primarily and ultimately a judgment of fact. The orthodox Kantian would refer to our stand as mere psychologism, as an appeal to the empirical that can yield no more than a provisional probability. But our refort is simple enough. Without judgments of fact one cannot get beyond mere analytic propositions. Further, though self-affirmation is no more than a judgment of mere fact, still it is a privileged judgment. Self-negation is incomerent. One has only to inquire and reflect, to find

- 108 -

0

С

oneself caught in the synchronities and inevitabilities that supply
the evidence for celf-affirzation. One has only to make a simple
jubgeout of fact, no matter that its content, to involve oneself
in a necessary self-affirmation. Finally, cognitional theory
differs from other theory: for other theory reaches exclanation
only by venturing into the merely supposed; but cognitional
theory reaches explanation without any such venture: and since
it contains no merely hypothetical element, it is not subject to
radical revision.

From Kallan to turn to relativist thought. The initial quantion in the propert solution was whether correct judgments occur. Our account of self-affirmation directly contradicts the relativist contention that correct judgments do not occur. Though the arguments for our position have been given jit will not be asise to indicate where the relativist could discrete and why.

First, relativite bloucht is longely devoted to a refutation of expiricism. Conceptly is insists that human knowing cannot be accounted for by the level of presentations alone. There is, as well, the level of initializance, of grasping and formal ting intalligible unities and systematic relations. Without this second level of activities, there is, indeed, (a given) but there is no possibility of acying what (is given.)

Secondly, just as the relativist insists on the level of intelligence against the expiricist, so we insist on the level of reflection egalest the relativist. Human knowing is not merely theory about the piven: there are also facts; and the relativist has not and econot establish that there are no facts, for the

О

С

- 109 -

absence of any other fact would itself be a fact.

Thirdly, just as the empiricist could have nothing to say if, in fact, he did not utilize operations on the level of intelligence, so also the relativist does not confine himself strictly to the levels of presentations and of intelligence. He is quite familiar with the notion of the unconditioned. He regards the unconditioned as the ideal towards which human knowing tends. But he supposes that this ideal is to be reached through understanding. If the universe in its every part and aspect were thoroughly understood, there could be no further questions; everything would be conceived as it bught to be; on every possible topic a man could say just what he meant and mean just what he said. On the other hand, short of this comprehensive coherence, there can be no sure footing. There is understanding, but it is partial; it is joined with incomprehension; it is open to revision when present incomprehension yields to future understanding; and so intimately are all things related that knowledge of anything can be definitive only when everything is known.

37

Fourthly, the relativist is able to follow up this general view by facing concrete issues. Is this a typewriter? Probably, Yes. For practical purposes, Yes. Absolutely? The relativist would prefer to be clear about the precise meaning of the name, <u>typewriter</u>: he would like to be told just what is meant by the demonstrative, <u>this</u>: he would be grateful for an explanation of the meaning of the copula, $(\leq$. Your simple question is met by three further questions; and if you answer these three, your answers will give rise to many more. If you are quick and see that you are starting on an

0

- 110 -

О

О

infinite series, you may confront the relativist with a rounded system. But the relativist is also a smart fellow. He will point out that ordinary people, guite certain that this is a typewriter, know nothing of the system on which you base their knowledge. Hor is this all. For human knowledge is limited; systems have their weak points; and the relativist will pounce upon the very issues on which a defender of the system would prefer to profess ignorance.

38

Fifthly, not only will the relativist make it plain that there are further questions until everything is known, but also he will explain why this is so. A relation is named internal to an object when, without the relation, the object would differ radically. Thus, we have spoken of inquiry and insight. But by inquiry we have not meant some pure wonder; we have meant a wonder about something. Similarly, by insight we have not meant a pure understanding but an understanding of something. Inquiry and insight, then, are related internally to materials about which one inquires and into which one gains insight. How, if one supposes that the whole universe is a pattern of internal relations, clearly it follows that no part and no aspect of the universe can be known in isolation from any other part or aspect: for every item is related internally to every other; and to prescind from such relations is to prescind from things as they are and to substitute in their place other imaginary objects that simply are not. If, then, one asks the relativist to explain why questions run off to infinity, he has a ready answer. The universe to be known by answering questions is a tissue of internal relations.

- 111 -

0

0

О

Sixthly, if the foregoing fairly represents the relativist position, it also reveals its oversights. Questions are of two kinds. There are questions for intelligence asking what this 1s, what that means, why this is so, how frequently it occurs or exists. There also are questions for reflection that ask whether enswers to the former type of question are correct. Next, the unconditioned that is required for judgment is not the comprehensive coherence that is the ideal of understanding, that grounds answers to all questions of the first type. On the contrary, it is a virtually unconditioned that results from the combination of a conditioned with the fulfilment of its conditions. Further, a judgment is a limited commitment; so far from resting on knowledge of the universe, it is to the effect that, no matter what the rest of the universe may prove to be, at least this is so. I may not be able to settle border-line instances in which one might dispute thether the name, typewriter, would be appropriate. But, at least, I can settle definitely that this is a typewriter. I may not be able to clarify the meaning of is, but it is sufficient for present purposes to know the difference between is and is not, and that, I know. I am not very articulate when it comes to explaining the meaning of this; but if you prefer to use that, it will make no difference provided we both see what we are talking about. You warn me that I have made mistakes in the past. But your warning is meaningless, if I am making a further mistake in recognizing a past mistake as a mistake. And in any case, the sole present issue is whether or not I am mistaken in affirming this to be a typewriter. You explain to me that my notion of a typewriter would be very different, if I understood the chemistry of the materials, the mechanics of the construction, the psychology of the

0

0

0

- 112 -

typist's skill, the effect on sentence structure resulting from the use of a module in composing, the economic and sociological repercussions of the invention, its relation to connercial and political bureaucracy, and so forth. But may I not explain to you that all those further items, however interesting and significant, are to be known through further julgments, that such further julgments, so far from shifting me from my present conviction that this is a typewriter, will only confirm mo in it, that to make those further julgments would be rather difficult if, at the start, I could not be cartain whether or not this is a typewriter?

564

Seventhly, however, the questions that are answered by a pottern of internal relations are only questions that ask for explanatory system. But basides things-thouselves and prior to them in our knowing, there are things-for-us, things as described. Moreover, the existents and occurrences, in which explanatory systems are varified, diverge non-systematically from the ideal frequencies that ideally would be deduced from the explanatory systems. Again, the activity of verifying involves the use of description as an intermediary betwin the system defined by internal relations and, on the other hand, the presentations of sense that are the fulfilling conditions. Finally, it would be a mistake to suppose that explanation is the one true knowledge; not only does its verification rest on description but also the relations of things to us are just as such objects of knowledge as are the fulfilling conditions.

O

О

С

Eighthly, the relativist invents for himself a universe that

0

- 113 -

consists mercly of explanatory system because he objectives the unconditioned as the light of understanding, as the comprehensive coherence towards which understanding tends by acking what and why. But as we have seen, the criterion of judgment is the virtually unconditioned. Each judgment is a limited commitment. So far from pronouncing on the universe, it is content to affirm some single conditioned that has a finite number of conditions which, in fact, are fulfilled. No doubt, were the universe simply a wash explanatory system, knowledge of the conditions of any conditioned would be identical with knowledge of the universe. But, in fact, the universe is not simply explanatory system; its existents as its occurrences diverge non-systematically from pure intelligibility; it exhibits an empirical residue of the individual, the incldental, the continuous, the marely juxtapored, and the merely successive; it is a universe of facts, and explanatory system has validity in the measure that it conforms to descriptive facts.

Ninthly, the relativist argument from unending further questions is more impressive than conclusive. Human knowing does not begin from previous knowing but from natural spontaneities and inevitabilities. Its basic terms are not defined for it in some knowing prior to knowing; they are fixed by the dynamic structure of cognitional process itself. The relativist asks what is meant by the cogula, <u>is</u>, and the demonstrative, <u>this</u>. But noither he nor acyone else is given to confusing <u>is</u> with <u>is not, or this with not, this</u>; and that basic clavity is all that is relevant to the meaning of the affirmation, This is a typewriter. A cognitional theorist would be called upon to explain

G

О

0

- 114 -

such elementary terms; he would do so by saying that is represents the <u>Yes</u> that occurs in judgment and that is anticipated by such questions as, Is it? What is it?. Similarly, a theorist would explain this as the return from the field of conception to the empirical residue in the field of presentations. But questions relevant to cognitional theory are not relevant to every instance of knowing. They are not universally relevant becouse, in fact, there is no operational obscurity about the meanings that cognitional theory elucidates. Again, they are not universally relevant, because such elementary meanings are fixed, in a manner that surpasses determination by definition, with the native immutability of the dynamic structures of cognitional process.

566

Tenthly, as human knowing begins from natural spontaneity, so its initial developments are inarticulate. As it asks what and why without being given the reason for its inquiry, so also it sets off on the self-correcting process of learning without the explicit formulations that rightly would be required in an explanatory system. Single insights are pertial. Spontaneously they give rise to the further questions that elicit complementary insights. Were the universe purely an explanatory system, the minor clusters of insights reached by what is called common sense would $\frac{f_{ched}}{f_{0}}$ as found of familiarity and mestery in which evidently it is silly to doubt whether or not this is a typewriter. But, in fact, the universe to be known by answering questions is not pure explanatory system. In fact, insights do

- 135 -

0

C

O

XX

G

O

С

lead to

(head for) limiting positions of fundliarity and mattery. In feet, ac everyone knows very well, it is silly to doubt whether or not this is a type riter. The relativist world beg me to advert to the enormous difference in my notion of the typewriter were I to understand fully the closistry of its materials, the mechanics of its construction, the psychology of the typist's skill, the t ist given literacy style by composing on a typewriter, the effect of its investion of the development of compareial and political bureauccacy, en up forth. But granted such an enricament of my knowladge to be possible and desirable, none the less it is further knowledge to be obtained by further julgments; and since the enrichment is explanatory, since explanatory knowledge rests on descriptive knowledge, not only must I begin by knowing that this is a typewriter, not only must I advance by learning how similar other machines must be if they are to be moved typewriters, but also I can attain valid explanation only in so far as my descriptions are exact.

El wonthiv, it is quite true that I can be mistaken. But that truth presupposes that I can not making a further mistake in acknowledging a past mictake as a mistake. More generally, judgmeets of fact are correct or incorrect, not of necessity, but a rely in fact. (If (hi) is comething, still it might be nothing at all.) the instability of the source of incorrect. To ask for if it is a typewriter, still it might be sourced along static provident of if is not a pure necessity, but a maly a f et that I as correct. To ask for the ovidence that excludes the possibility of my being mistaken in affirming this to be a typewriter, is to ask too much. Such

- 116 -

evidence is not available, for if I am correct, that is merely fact. But if that evidence is not available, still less is there the evidence that will exclude the possibility of error in all judgments of fact. Errors are just as much facts as are correct judgments. But the relativist is in conflict with both categories of fact. For him nothing is simply true, for that is possible only when comprehensive coherence is reached; for him, nothing is simply wrong, for every statement involves some understanding and so some part of what he names truth. In the last analysis, just as the empiricist tries to banish intelligence, so the relativist tries to banish fact and, with it, what everyone else names truth.

- 117 -

0

O

O

O

Chapler Kir:

C

С

THE NOTION OF BRING

569

If the main lines of conditional process have been set lown, it remains that certain fundamental and pervesive notions face that be clarified. Among them, in the first place, is the notion of being. It is a tricky topic and, perhaps, the most satisfactory

procedure will be to begin from a definition. A Definition.

Being, then, is the objective of the pure desire to know. By the desire to know is seant the lynamic orientation manifested in questions for intelligence and for reflection. It is not the verbal utterance of questions. It is not the conceptual formulation of questions. It is not any insight or thought. It is not any reflective grasp or judgment. It is the prior and enveloping drive that carries cognitional process from sense and imagination to understanding, from understanding to judgment, from that congeteren for judgment to the complete context of corpact judgments that is named knowledge. The desire to snow, then, is simply the inquiring and critical spirit of san. By moving his to seek understanding. it prevents him from being content with the neve flow of outer and inner experience. By demanding adequate understanling, it involves men in the self-correcting process of learning is which further questions yield complementary insights. By moving can to reflect, to seek the unconditional, to grant unqualified ascent only to the unconditioned, it prevents his from being content with hearsay and legend, with unverified hypotheses and untasted theories.

(570)

Finally, by raising still further questions for intelligence and reflection, it excludes complicent inertia; for if the questions go unenswered, man cannot be complicent; cut if enswers are sought, man is not inert.

Because it differe redically from other desire, this besire has been nemed pare. It is to be known, not by the misleading analogy of other desire, but by giving free rain to intullisent and the unpelpable but another desire provided and rational concelements. It is, indeed, impalpable but also it is powerful. It wills man out of the solid routine of perception and constion, instinct and heldt, doing and enjoying. It holds him with the facturation of problems. It is not established. It compels assent to the unconditional. It is the cool shraphes of control series, the disinter stedness of science, the detail and of chilosophy. It is the absorption of investigation, the joy of discovery, the assumate of julgment, the modesty of limited knowledge. It is the releating science, the detailing of the importurbable drive of question following appositely on constitution in the provise of truth.

This pure domines have an objective. It is a desire to know, As more desire, it is for two satisfaction of acts of knowing, for the satisfaction of understanding, of understanding fully, of understanding correctly. But as pure desire, as cool, disinterested, detached, it is not for counttional acts, and the satisfaction they give their subject, but for cognitional contents, for what is to be know. The satisfaction of mistaken understanding.

- 119 -

provided one does not know it as mistaken, can equal the satisfaction of correct understanding. Yet the pure desire scorns the former and prizes the latter; it prizes it, then, as dissimilar to the former; it prizes it not because it yields satisfaction but because its content is correct.

a ya wana kata ka kata ka kata ka kata ka kata kata

The objective of the pure desire is the content of knowing rather than the act. Still, the desire is not itself a knowing, and so its range is not the came as the range of knowing. Initially in each individual, the pure desire is a dynamic orientation to a totally unknown. As knowledge develops, the objective becomes less and less unknown, more and more known. At any time the objective includes both all that is known and all that remains unthe generation of cognitional process and dynamism that both underlies actual attainment and heads beyond it with ever further questions.

What is this objective? Is it limited or unlimited? Is it one or many? Is it material or ideal? Is it phenomenal or real? Is it an immanent content or a transcendent object? Is it a reals of experience, or of thought, of essences or of exist- () ents? Answers to these and to any other questions have but a single source. They cannot be had without the functioning of the pure desire. They cannot be had without the functioning of the pure desire. They cannot be had from the pure desire alone. They are to be had incomplet as the pure desire initiates and sustains cognitional process. Thus, if it is true that A is, that A is one, and that there is only A, then the objective of the pure desire is one. But if it is true that A is, that B is, that A is not B, than the objective is many. Which, you ask, is true? The fact that you ask, results from the pure desire. But to reach the

- 120 -

0

O

(572)

answer, desiring is not enough; answers come only from inquiring and reflecting.

Not our definition was that being is the objective of the pure desire to know. Being, then, is 1) all that is movem and 2) all that remains to be known. Again, since a complete increment of knowing occurs only in judgment, being is what is to be known by the totality of true judgments. What, one may ask, is that totality? It is the complete set of answers to the complete set of questions. What the answers are, remains to be seen. What the questions are, avoits their emergence. Meaningless or incoherent or illegitimate questions may be possible, but how they are to be defined, is a further question. The affirmation in hand is that there exists a sume desire to know, an inquiring and critical spirit, that follows up questions with further questions, that "heads for" some objective which has been named being.

Our definition of being, then, is of the second order. Other definitions determine what is meant. But this definition is more remote for it assigns, not what is meant by being, but how that Meaning is to be determined. It asserts that if you know, then you know being: it asserts that if you wish to know, then you wish to know being; but it does not bettle whether you know or what you know, whether your sish will be fulfilled or what you will know of effective when it is fulfilled.

Still, though our definition is of the second order, it is not simply indeterminate. For neither the desire to know nor knowing itself are indeterminate. Indeauch as knowing is determinate, we could say that being is what is to be known by true judgments.

- 121 -

Insimuch as the desire to know ever goes beyond actual knowledge, we could say that being is what is to be known by the totality of true judgments. Hence, being has, at least, one characteristic: it is all-inclusive. Apart from being there is nothing. Again, being is completely concrete and completely universal. It is completely concrete; over and above the being of any thing, there is nothing more of that thing. It is completely universal; apart from the reals of being, there is simply nothing.

2. An Unrothette Action. One may various just how all-inclusive being is. That wonder may be forwalated in a variety of manners. But no matter how it is formulated, no matter whether it can be formulated, it can serve only to show how all-inclusive being is. For the wonder is inquiry. It is the desire to know. Anything it can discover or invent, by that very fact is included in the notion of being. Hence, the offort to establish that being is not all-inclusive must be selfdefeating; for at the root of all that can be affirmed, at the root of all that can be conceived, is the pure desire to know: and it is the pure desire, underlying all judgment and formulation, underlying all questioning and all desire to question, that defines its all-inclusive objective.

None the less, it may not be amiss to illustrate this principle concretely. It will be said that there is much we do not know. No do bt, our knowned is great, but we know that fact by raising questions that we do not answer; and being is defined not only by the answers we give but also by the questions relask. Next, it will be said that there is much it would be futile for us to try to learn. He doubt, the proximately fruitful field of

- 122 -

О

inquiry is restricted. But we know that fact by distinguishing between the questions we can hope soon to answer and those that, as yet, we are not prepared to tackle; and being is defined, not only by the questions we can hope to subwer, but also by the questions hose answer we have to postpone.

Thirdly, it will be objected by many that they have so desire to know everything about everything. But how do they know that they do not already know everything about everything? It is because so many questions can be asked. Why do they not effectively will to know everything about everything? Because it is so troublesome to reach everything about everything? Because it is so troublesome to reach every a fer answers that they are completely disheartened by the prospect of answering all the questions they could ask.

The attack my be made from the opposite flank. The trouble is that the definition of being is too inclusive. Questions can be meaningless, illusory, incoherent, illegitimate. Trying to answer them door not lead to knowledge of anything. Now, no doubt, there are mistoken questions that load nowhere. But mistaken questions are formulated questions. Being her been defined, not as the objective of formulated questions, but as the objective of the pure desire to know. Just as that desire is prior to any answer and it itself is not the answer, so too, it is prior to any formulated question and it itself is not a formulation. Moreover, just as the pure desire is the intelligent on antional basis from which we discome between convect and incorect answers, so also it is the intelligent and a struct for which we discore between valid and mistaken questions. In brief, the pure desire to know, where

- 123 -

objective is being, is the source not only of answers but also of their criteria, and not only of questions but also of the grounds on which they are screened. For it is intelligent inquiry and reasonable reflection that just as much yield the right questions as the right answers.

والانتداعة الأوارية وأخصاصها كالأراث لأتحاص والمالي

More fundamental misgivings may arise. If one pleases, one may define being as what is to be known through the totality of true judgments. But is being really that? Might it not be something entirely different? The questions arise. They may be valid or mistaken. If they are mistaken, they are to be ignored. If they are valid, then our misgivings are without foundation. For the being that might be totally different, turns out to be exactly what we are talking about. For we ask whether it might be; and the being we are talking about, is the being we ask about.

Again, might there not be an unknowable? If the question is valid, it is to be ignored. If the question is valid, the answer may be "Yes" or "No". But the answer, "Yes", would be incoherent, for then one would be knowing that the unknowable is; and the answer, "No", would leave everything knowable and within the range of being.

Other doubts may arise, but instead of chasing after them one by one, it will be better to revert to our initial theorem. Hvery doubt that the pure desire is unrestricted serves only to prove that it is unrestricted. If you ask whether X might not lie beyond its range, the fact that you ask proves that X lies within its range. Or else, if the question is meaningless, incoherent, illusory, illegitimate, then X turns out to the more

- 124 -

O

nothing that results from aberration in cognitional process.

Not only, then, is jugarant absolute, not only does it rest upon a grasp of the unconditioned, not only does reflection set the dichotomy, Is it or is it not? @But at the root of cognitional process there is a cool, detached, disinterested desire to know and its range is nurestricted. Being is the anything and everything that is the objective of that desire.

3.

-3

C

A Spontaneous hotion If the have explained that we mean by being, we must now ask what the notion of being is.

In the first place, a distinction has to be drawn between the spontaneously operative notion and, or the other hand, theoretical accounts of its genesis and content. The spontaneously operative notion is invariant; it is common to all men; it functions in the same manner no matter what theoretical account of it a man may come to accept. On the other head, theoretical accounts of the content and genesis of the notion are numerous; they vary with philosophic contexts, with the completeness of a thinker's observations, with the thoroughness of his analysis. First, we shell give our account of the spontaneously operative notion, and then we shall add a few notes on other theoretical accounts of it.

On the supposition of our analysis of cognitional process, it is easy enough to conclude that the spontaneously operative notion of being has to be placed in the sure desire to know. For, first of all, men are apt to agree that things are, whether or not we know them and, moreover, that there are many things that are know way only incompletely or even not at all. The notion of being, then, extends beyond the known. Secondly, being is known

- 125 -

in judgment. It is in judgment that we affirm or deny and, until we are meady to affirm or deny, we do not yet must whether or not any X happens to be. Still, though being is known only in judging, the notion of being is prior to judging. For prior to any juigment there is reflection, and reflection is formulated in the question, Is 1t? That question supposes some notion of being and, strangely enough, it is prior to each instance of our knowing being. Not only does the notion of being extend beyond the known but also it is write to the final communit of knowing when being is actually known. Thirdly, there are objects of thought. I can think of a horse and, no less, I can think of a contaur. I can think of the bost available scientific opinion on any subject and, no less, I can think of all the previous opinions that in their day were the best available on the same subject. In one sense, they are all equivalent, for as long as one is coroly thinking, moraly considering, merely supposing, one deals morely with the conditioned and it makes no difference whether or not its conditions are fulfilled. Thinking, then, prescinds from existing. But if it prescinds from existing, does it presched from being and if it presches from being, is not all thinking about nothing? The trouble with this argument is that thus dig also prescials from not existing. If I think of a centaur or of phlogiston, I presend from the fact that they do not exist; hence, if prescieding from existing is prescinding from being, prescinding from non-existence is prescipting from not being; if prescinding from being proves that I as thinking of sothing, then presending from not being proves that I am thinking of something. Now this type of consideration has led many thinkers

- 126 -

0

0

С

578)10

to suppose that being is one thing and existing is another, that horses and centaurs, electrons and phlogiston, equally are, but horses and electrons exist while centaurs and phloriston do not exist. Still that conclusion does not satisfy the facts, for apart from the oddity of asserting that the non-existent is, there is (the (oversight of) the dynamism of cognitional process. In a sense, thinking prescinds from existing and not existing, for it is not thinking but judging that determines whether or not anything exists. In soother sense, thicking does not prescind from existing and not existing, for thinking is purposive: we think to get our concepts straight: we wish to get our concepts studght that we say he able to judget so far from prescieding from existing and not existing. thinking is for the purpose of letermining whether or not what is thought does exist. It follows that the notion of being goes beyond the modely thought, for we ask whether or not the merely thought exists. No loss, it follows that the notion of being is prior to thinking, for were it not, then thinking could not be for the purpose of judging, for the purpose of determining whether or not the mersly thought exists. The notion of being, then, is prior to conception and goes beyond it: and it is prior to judgment and goes beyond it. That notion must be the immanent, dynamic orientation of cognitional process. It must be the detached and unrestricted desire to know as operative in cognitional process. Desiring to know is desiring to know being; but it is merely the desire and not yet knowing. Thinking is thinking being; it is not thinking nothing; but thinking being is not yet knowing it. Judging is a complete increment in knowing; if correct, it is a knowing of

- 127 -

(579)₁₁

being; but it is not yet knowing being, for thet is attained only through the totality of connect ju grants.

Still, how can an orientation or a desire be named a notion. A fostal eye is orientated towards mesing: but a fostal eye loss not use and 't has no notion of seeing: a notion arises only in so far all enderstaining discourd future function in present structure. Has as is orientated towards food and mating: it is a desire; it lies within expirical consumments but a notion ariser only in so fur a the orientated to and prepurposive house action is orientated to and or product: cognitional elements are prior to the solien; they are constituted, not by the action itself, but by the planning that preceded it.

It reactions that none of these instance: is exactly parallel to the relation between the desire to know and cognitional process. For the desire to know is not uncernations, a lis the fortal eye, her desire to know is not uncernations, a lis the fortal eye, her desireably conscious, as is bunger, sor a consequence of intellectual acceletion, as are deliberation and choice. The desire to anot is our close intelligently and rationally; it is inquiring intelligence and reflecting reasonableness. Simply as desire, it is orients close bitself intelligence, as obverse, looks for the intelligible, as reverse. Reasonableness, as obverse, looks for the grounded, as reverse. Heasonableness, as obverse, looks for the grounded, as reverse. Heasonableness, as obverse, heaven affer ing for, the desiring, the inquiring-and-reflecting is an obverse that intelligently and rationally heads for an unrestricted objective mared being. Here that heading unconacious, there would be an

. **1**23

0

C

e - Self en les els services des que aqué a la competence de la competence de la competence de la competence d

12

orientation towards being but there would be an desire to be or being and no motion of being. These that <u>has ing</u> expirically conscious, there would be an orientation towards being and a felt desire to know being, but there would be no notion of bring. In fact, the hyadical is intelligent and estimat, and so there is not only an orientation towards being, not only a mura desire to know being, but also a potion of being.

Let us try to data's this notion, this intention of being, in the act. Man association, and controly we mean a direction of strendon to so paspects of the given with a concolitant neglect of other aspects. The geodeter considers the circle as a plane figure obeying a certain role: he disregards the site, the color, the inexactitude of the figure ho draws or imagines; still more se dows he discogard other and more loo. By connected aspects of the given. But that is not all. He disrepards all other questions in geometry, all other depretments of mathematics, all other fields of science, all other human occupations to which he could . turn his hand. He considers only the circle. He abstracts from everything also. He door so intelligently, for though the objecttve of his living is one arteinted, still be can nove to arts it only by compatizating on one element at a tite. Alain, as intelli-Egnes abstracts, on coffection preculats. If I am to budge, whether or not this is a typescient, I have to promund from all that is not rel want to the second. I have to know all that is relevant. If I word a relativist, I ould have to know the universe to know all that is roll what to that single ju Frank. Svan though I am not a relativist, over though I find that many conditioned proposi-

- 129 -

C

tions become virtually unconditioned on the fulfilment of a manageable number of conditions, still this restriction of the relevant is accompanied by an acknowledgement of a universe of irrelevancies. (Finally, as intelligence concentrates of the significant to abstract from all else, as reflection concentrates on the relevant to prescind from all else, so further questions and further iscues arise neither as a surprise nor as a new bedinning. The abstracting and the prescinding were provisional: they were only moments in a larger process. Nor is that larger process meraly the object of interspective analysis. Inwarent within it and operative of it lies as intelligent and ratiosal consciousness that unrestrictedly intends a correspondingly unrestricted objective named being, or the all, or everything about everything, o the concrete aniverse. Just as the potion of the intelligible is involved in the actual functioning of jut alligence, just as the notion of the grounded is involved in the actual functioning of reasonableness, so the notion of being is involved in the unrestricted drive of inquiring intelligence and reflecting reasonableness. 4 an all-pervacire hotion sence it is that the notion of being is all-pervasive. It

underspine all cognitional contents. It penetrates them all. It constitutes them as cognitional.

It unterspins all cognitional contents. Without the pure desire to know, sensitive living would remain in its routine of perception and constant, instinct and habit, exotion and action. What breaks that clocuit and release intellectual activity is the wonder Aristotle described as the beginning of all science and philosophy. But that wonder is intelligent inquiry. It selects

- 130 -

0

data for insight and by selecting it underspins even the expirical component in our knowing. Still more obviously all ideas and all concepts are responsed to the desire to understand, and all judgments are responses to the lowend for the unconditioned.

Secondly, the estima of being penetrates all cognitional contents. It is the supreme hermistic estima. Prior to every content, it is the notion of the to-be-shown through that contents. As each content emerges, the "to-be-known through the content" passes ultipat residue into the "moon through that content". Some bland in universal enticipation is filled in, not merely to end that element of activization, but also to also the filler a part of the anticipation, but also to also the filler a part of the anticipation of the totality to be shown through all answers. But, once all answers are reiched, the notion of being becomes the notion of the totality known through all answers.

Thirdly, the notion of being constitutes all contents as cognitional. Experiencing is only the first level of knowing: it presents the matter to be known. Understanding is only the second level of knowing: it defines the matter to be known. Knowing reaches a complete increment only with jublicant, only when the marely experienced has been thought and the marely thought has decompleted been effirmed. But the increment of knowing is always completed in the same fushion. Superiance is a haleidescopic flow. Objects of thought are no various as the inventiveness of human intelligence. But the contribution of jublicant to our knowing is ever a mare "Yes" or "No", a more "is" or "is not". Experience is for inquiring into being. Intelligence is for thinking out being.

- 131 -

But by judgmont being is known, and in judgment what is known is known as being. Honey knowing is knowing being, yet the known is nover mere boing, just as judement is never a mere "Yes" apart from any quastion that Wood betweens.

5. The Core of Meaning. As the notion of being underspins all contents, and penstrates that, and constitutes then as cognitional, so also it is the core of geaning.

Distingaish 1) courses of maxing, 2) acts of meaning, 3) terms of meaning, and 4) the core of meaning.

Any element of Maculadge may corve as a cource of meaning. llence, sources of mouning include data and images, ideas and concepts, the grasp of the unconditioned and judgment and, no less, the detached and unrestricted desire to know.

Acts of meening are of three kinds. They are 1) formal, 2) full, 3) instrumental. The formal act of meaning is an act of conceiving, thinking, considering, defining, supposing, formulating. The full set of meening is ap act of judging. The instrumental act of maning is the implementation of a formal or of a full act by the use of words or cyclols in a space, written, or merely imagined utterance.

Terms of maning are what is meant. They are formal or full. Formal toran of meaning are what is conceived, thought, considered. defined, supposed, formulated. Fall terms of meaning are what is affirmed or denied.

Now the all-inclusive term of meaning is being, for apart from being there is nothing. Inversely, the core of all acts of meaning is the intention of boing.

- 132 -

Thus, any given judgment pertains to a context of judgments, and it is from the context that the meaning of the given judgment is determined. But why is the meaning of the given judgment a function of a context of other judgments? Because any judgment is but an increment in a whole named knowledge; because the meaning of the judgment is but an element in the determination of the universal intention of being.

Again, judgments may be true or false. The true judgment affirms what is and denies what is not. In the true judgment there is harmony between what is intended and what is meant. But in the false judgment there is conflict between intention and meaning. The false judgment as a judgment intends being; it intends to affirm what is and to deny what is not. But the false judgment as false is a failure to c rry out its intention as a judgment. It affirms what is not and denies what is. It means not what is but only what would be, were it not false but true: again, in its negative form, it means, not what is not, but what would not be, were it not false but true.

Perhaps it is this internal conflict that has led some to the conclusion that a false judgment is meaningless. But such a conclusion seems accountingly false. Were the false judgment meaningless, there would be nothing to be false. The false judgment is false precisely because it means a state of affairs that is the opposite of the state one intends to affirm, namely, the state that truly is.

On the level of conception there is a similar but less conspicuous contrast between meaning and its core, which is the

- 133 -

intention of being. Horses and unicorns, electrons and phlogiston, may be equally valid as formal terms of meaning. One can subjose them, or consider them, or define them, and that is all that is required of the formal term of meaning. Still, horses and electrons soon preferable as formal terms to unicorns and phlogiston. Absolutely, one can think of the latter, but there is something ille, something superfluons, something futile about such thinking. The reason for this is that thinking is a soment in the unfolding of the pure desire to know; though the thought as thought is morely a formal term of maning, though the unicown is just as valid a formal term as is the horse, still we do not merely think. Our thinking is purposive. It is a tentative determination of the all--inclusive notion of being. It not merely thinks the object of thought but also anticipates the object of judgment. It not merely means the formal term of maning but also looks ahead to the full term. Because the indcorn on I phlogiston are known to be unsuccessful determinations of being, they are for al terms in which the core of meaning, the intention of being, has become uninterested.

Finally, in view of the provalence of empiricist theories of meaning, a few words may be added on instrumental acts. Ordinary instrumental acts, such as sooken or written words or symbols, offer no special interest. But the empiricist emphasizes ostensive acts, under as deconstrative pronouns and adjectives and, of course, gestures. The reason for this exphasis may be readily grasped if one distinguishes between the function of gestures in any theory of meaning and the function gestures acquire in virtue

С

- 134 -

of empiricist affirmations. In any theory of meaning an ostensive act is an instrumental act of meaning; it presupposes formal or full acts of meaning, inasmuch as one knows what one means; and it refers to formal or full terms of meaning, inasmuch as all meening refers to a meant. Again, in any theory of meaning the ostensive act is operative incomuch as it succeeds in drawing another's attention to a sensible source of measing, so that by drawing on that source, by understanding, and by reflecting he may reach the appropriate formal or full term of meaning that is meant. But in empiricist opinion the ostensive act has a third function; for the empiricist identifies the valid field of full terms of meaning, (i.e., the universe of being) with the range of sensible presentations; hence, for the empiricist, the ostensive act not merely indicates a source of meaning but also a full term of meening. Whether or not this empiricist modification of the 944 theory of meaning is correct, will depend on the question whether or not the set of propositions that enunciate empiricism are to be pronounced true or false.

A fuggling holds. Before going on to consider other accounts of the action of being, it will be well to deal with a series of puzzles that seem to have a common root. Just as other concepts, the notion of being is represented by instrumental acts that are the name, being, and the verb, to be. By mistaken analogy it is inferred that the notion of being resembles concepts in their other aspects. But, in fact, the notion of being is unique; for it is the core of all acts of meaning; and it undergoins, penetrates, and goes beyond all other

- 135 -

Ô

cognitional contents. Hence, it is idle to characterize the notion of being by appealing to the ordinary rules or laws of conception. That has to grasped, is its divergence from such rules and laws and, to descend to details, a series of questions will be briefly considered.

First, does the notion of being result from the expression or formulation of an act of understanding?

Other concepts result from some insight either into the use of their names, or into things-for-us, or into things-thomselves. The notion of bein prestrates all other contents, and so it is present in the forceletion of every concept. But the mittion of being has quite a different origin. It cannot result from an insight into being, for such an invisit could be an understanding of everything about overything, and such understanding we have not statised. It is, as has been said, the orientation of intelligent and rational consciousness towards an unrestricted objective.

Secondly, has the notion of being an essence, or is it an essence?

Ο

0

As other concepts result from acts of understanding, as acts of understanding consist in grasping what, from some viewnoint, is essential, other concepts are espenses. Moreover, as other concepts are complete prior to the question for reflection that asks wither or not any such essence is, other concepts are morely essences and prescind from existence or actuality. But the notion of being doe, not result from an understanding of being; it does not rest on the grasp of what from some viewpoint is essential; and so the motion of being is not the notion of some essence.

- 136 -

Further, the motion of being remains incomplete on the level of intelligence; it moves conception forward to questions for reflection; it moves beyond single judgments to the totality of correct judgments; and so it does not prescind from existence and actuality.

Thirdly, can the notion of being be defined?

F

0

It cannot be defined in any ordinary manner, for it underpins and penetrates and goes beyond the content of every definition. However, it does possess certain definite characteristics. For it regards the unrestricted objective of our knowing, the concrete universe, the totality of all that is. Moreover, it is determinate inasmuch as the structure of our knowing is determinate, and so it can be defined, at a second removed, by saying that it refers to all that can be known by intelligent grasp and reasonable affirmation. On the other hand, such definition does not settle which questions are appropriate to our knowing or which answers are correct. It leaves the materialist free to claim that to bej is to be material. Equally, it allows the empiricist to claim that to bej is to be experienced, the idealist to insist that to be is to be thought, the phenomenalist to explain that to be is to appear, and so forth.

Fourthly, how can one notion have such diverse meanings?

Because it is determinate only at a second remove. The notion of being is the sotion of what is to be determined by correct judgments. If the strategic correct judgments are that matter exists and nothing but matter exists, then the materialist is right. If the strategic correct judgments are that there is

- 137 -

appearance and nothing but appearance, then the phonomenalist is right. Similarly, if the propositions municipating other positions are correct, then being is as such positions doclare. The notion of being does not determine which position is correct; it merely determines that the intilligently grasped and reasonably affirmed is being.

Fifthly, has the notion of being any presuppositions or properties?

Other concepts are determinite essences and so they have presuppositions and implications. If X is not an animal, then X is not a man. If X is a man, then X is sortal. But the notion of being is not the notion of some essence. It becomes determined only as correct judgments are made, and it reaches its full determination only shen the totality of correct judgments(are)mode. Herever, the making of judgments is a determinate process, and one does not have to week all judgments to grasp the nature of that process. It is this fact that makes cognitional theory a determination of operations for (the determination of) the general structure of the concrete universe.

Sixthly, is the notion of being univocal or analogous?

Concepts are said to be univocal when they have the same meaning in all applications, and they are said to be analogous when their meaning varies systematically as one moves from one field of application to another. The motion of being may be named univocal inascuch as it underspins all other contents; for in that respect (it) is the one desire to know and it regards one unres-

- 138 -

С

tricted objective that is the concrete universe. Again, the notion of being may be named analogous inasmuch as it penetrates all other contents: in this fashion it is said that <u>esse viventium</u> <u>est vivere</u>; the being of living things is being alive. Finally, the notion of being may be said to be neither univocal nor analogous, for this distinction r gards concepts, while the notion of being both under#pins and goes beyond other contents. It may be noted, however, that what frequently enough is meant by the analogy of being is precisely what we mean by saying that the notion of being under#pins, penetrates, and goes beyond other contents.

Seventhly, is the notion of being abstract?

For a notion to be abstract it must possess a determinate content and abstract from other contents. The notion of being abstracts from nothing whatever. It is all-inclusive. Its content is determined by the totality of correct judgments.

However, there is a still larger totality of possible judgments; within it there are strategic sets that serve to define the general character of the concrete universe in accord with the varying viewpoints of different philosophies. Such strategic sets have already been illustrated, e.g., there is matter and nothing but matter, or there is appearance and nothing but matter, or there is appearance and nothing but appearance, or there is thought and nothing but thought, or/the structure of our knowing is determinate and so the structure of being proportionate to our knowing is determinate.

Now in virtue of such strategic sets of judgeshts it is possible to distinguish between the general character of the concrete universe, and, on the other hand, the concrete universe

C

0

- 139 -

in all its details. (Hearly enough, a determination of the geneval character of the concrete universe is an abstract view of being, for it considers not (the whole of)being as a mode but the whole of being as fixed by some strategic part or aspect.

In this fashion one reaches a general meaning for the phruso, being as being. But to determine what being as being is in any particular philosophy, one has to examine the strategic judgments of that philosophy: and to determine what is the correct meaning of being as being, one has to examine the strategic judgpents of the correct philosophy.

Bighthly, is the notion of being a genus or species or difference?

Increased as the notion of bing is prior to all other cognitional contents, it is like a goods a siting division by the addition of difference. But in souch as the notion of being anticipates, penetrates, and includes all other contents, it differs from the genus, which is a determinate contant quite distinct from the content of its differences. Thus, being can be divided into red, green, and blue beings; and color can be divided into red, green and blue colors. But the concept of red has a content or element of content absent in the concept of color, and so it differentiates the genus by adding to it from without. On the oth r hand, the concept of red has no content and no element of content absent in the notion of being; it cannot differentiste being by adding to it from without for, without being, apart from being, there is simply nothing. Finally, the notion

C

Ο

0

- 140 -

O

of b ing not only under-pine and ponetrates all other contents but also complements them intersuch as the "Yes" of julct-nt constitutes them as actually conditioned, and so endows them with an actual objective reference.

Ninthly, then one thinks without as yet judging, either one is thinking of being or of nothing. If one is thinking of being, then one does not need to judge in order to know being. If on is thinking of nothing, then all thought must be identical, for it always deals with the same nothing.

Then one thinks, conceives, considers, supposes, or defines, one loss to with respect to being. Hence we accept the first alternative. What one thinks of, is being. Still, to think of being is one thing; to know being is another. To think of being is to operate on the second level of cognitional process: it is to be on the way towards a complete increment of knowing; but it is not to have reached anything more than a partial increment that can be completed only by julging.

Tenthly, the notion of being is the notion of the concrete universe. But universal propositions are abstract and, none the less, they may be affirzed in jubiment. Either, then, judgment is not about being, or else being is not concrete.

The motion of being is the motion of the concrete in the same manner as it is of the universe. It is of the universe because questions and only then there is nothing more to be asked. It is of the concrete, because until the concrete is reached, there remain further questions. Hence, it is not the single judgment but the totality of correct judgments that equates with the con-

О

0

- 141 -

crete universe that is being.

The problem of the universal proposition may be met by the distinguishing between formal and the material aspects of the analytic proposition. Formally an analytic proposition is 1) a conditioned, 2) linked to its conditions by the laws governing the coalescence of the partial instrumental meanings of words into the complete instrumental meaning of the sentence, and 3) having its conditions fulfilled by the meanings or definitions of the words it employs. Materially analytic propositions differ inasmuch as the terms and relations employed 1) may be known to occur in concrete judgments of fact, cor 3) may be known not to occur in concrete judgments of fact.

For ally every analytic proposition regards the concrete universe inasmuch as syntactical laws are factual aspects of the coalescence of partial into complete instrumental mernings. Materially some analytic propositions regard the concrete universe either in fact, as in the first case, or tentatively, as in the

7. Theories of the holion of Being A distinction has been dearn between the spontaneously

С

С

A distinction has been deam between the spontaneously operative notion of being, common to all men, and theoretical accounts of that notion, that differ from one philosophy to another. Our own theoretical account has been given. It remains that further elavifications be sought by contrasting it with some of the views that have been proposed by others.

For Parmenides, Being was one, without origin or end, homogeneous and indivisible, immovable and unchangeable, full and

- 142 -

spherical. See F.M. Counford, <u>Plato and Parmenides</u>, London, 1939, pp. 23 ff.

The genesis of this position would seem to be as follows. Parmenides eliminated the alternative of blank negation, and so was left with the alternative of officming. Affirmation may be reasonably grounded, and then it is the Way of Truth, or it may lack reasonable grounds, and then it is the Way of Seeming. Parmenides arrived at his notion of being by following the Way of Truth.

What does the choice of reasonable affirmation imply being to be? If one accepts any affirmation, one has also to accept the correct statement of the meaning, suppositions, and consequences of the affirmation. Every julgment stands in need of a context, and without affirming the context the affirmation of the initial judgment loses its meaning. Thus, reasonable affirmation has to be the affirmation of a set of judgments, which form a single whole, and so the affirmed is a corresponding single whole.

What is this simple whole that is affirmed to be? The proper answer is to not to work inquiring and reflecting with respect to the whole of explanate. The whole to be known corresponds to the totality of correct judgments. But Parmenides took a shorter route. He did not advect to the fact that being admits no more than a definition of the second order. He treated the notion of being as though it were a concept like "man" or "circle". He supposed that it was a determinate essence with determinate suppositions and determinate consequences. Because being is, it cannot be not-being, nor becoming, nor ceasing to be. Inversely, weither not-being nor becoming nor ceasing to be are being, and so they

- 143 -

О

С

С

must be nothing. Again, being cannot be differentiated; what differs from being, is not being; and what is not being, is nothing. Again, since there are no differences within being, there can be no motion or change within being. Finally, emptiness, the void, is nothing; being is not nothing, and so it cannot be emptiness; therefore, it is full. Ste....

Plato's Forms more projections into a poetic heaven of what transcends or linary, sensitive experience. The Forms, then, are the ideal objectives of 1) aesthetic experience, 2) the insights of the mathematician and physicist, 3) the unconditioned of reflective understanding, 4) moral conscience, and 5) intelligently and reasonably purposive living. They are a confused bag and, as it seems, the <u>Parmenides</u> marks the turning point in which the necessity of drawing distinctions and setting up a more comprehonsive theory becomes evident.

In the <u>Sophistes</u> the philosopher is described as heading through rational discourse for the Idea of Being (254 a). It is acknowledged that the isolation of each form from all the others would eliminate the possibility of discourse which lies in the conjunction of distinct Forms or categories (259 e). There is, then, a commingling or participation among the Forms (259 a) and there is a Form of Not-being just as much as of the Great or the Fair (258 c).

The inadequacy of this position lies in its failure to distinguish between the level of intelligence and the level of reflection. Without that distinction, the unconditioned of judgment is surreptitiously attributed to mere objects of thought to transform them into eternal Forms and, inversely, the "is" and "is not"

0

0

- 144 -

by which judgment posits the unconditioned can have a meaning only if they too are supposed to be Forms. There results an aggregate of Forms, each radically and eternally distinct from all the others. Still they are to be reached only through rational discourse, and if discourse is to refer to them, then there must be a commingling on their part to correspond to the synthetic elements in discourse. What is this compingling of distinct Forms? It would seem batter, b fore trying to answer so difficult a question, to determine whether or not the question really arises. In fact, we would argue, it does not. Until judgment is reached, the increment of knowing is incomplete. Before judgment is reached, the synthetic element is already present in knowing. All that judgment adds to the question for reflection 1s the "Yes" or "No", the "is" or "is not". What is affirmed or denied may be a single proposition or the whole set of propositions constitutive of a hypothesis, for either may be reparded as conditioned and either may be grasped as virtually unconditioned. Judgmont, then, 1s not a synthesis of terms but the unconditioned positing of such a synthesis. Corresponding to judgment there is not a synthesis of Forms but the absolute of fact. Platonism is magnificient in its devotion to the pure desire to know. But its failure to grasp the nature of judgment resulted in a deviation from the concrete universe of fact to as ideal heaven.

Aristotle chang to the Platonist definition of judgment as a synthesis (Sophistes 263: De Anima III,6,430a 26). Still, he distinguished sharply between questions for intelligence (What is

О

- 145 -

0

 \mathbf{c}

(597) 29

it? Why is it so?) and questions for reflection (Is it? Is it so?) [Post. Anal., II,1,3% 22ff] with the result that he had a same and class-headed respect for (fact) without reaching its fract) implications. He would not have agreed with the appiricist that places fact, not in the virtually unconditioned, but in the sensible fulfilment through which the conditioned becomes grasped as unconditioned. But you would out him a question he had not adequately considered, if you asked him whether the virtually unconditioned way a third component in our knowing or, on the other hard, sorely a rubber-stamp of app oval attached to the conceptual unification of its semicide and intelligible components.

This unresolvel unbigality appears both in his metholology and in his metaphysics. For him the supreme crestion mas the question of existence. Still it was a question that was already answered in descriptive knowing; that answer had to be presupnosed in the search for explanation; and the function of explanation was simply to determine what things are sainly they have the properties they possess. The intrinsically hypothetical character of explanation and its need of a Surther, verifying judgment of existence were overlooked. Again, Aristotle asks, what being is. That question expresses the demand for understanding. for knowledge of the cauce. Quite acturally, Aristotle answers that the cause of being is its isoment form (Met. 2, 17). Primarily, being is that is constituted by a substantial form or, on second thoughts. by the combination of substantial form and matter. Secondarily. being is what is considered by accidental forms; "white", "beat", "strength" are not nothing though they are not simply what is

- 146 -

meant by being. Again, being is the collection of existing substances with their properties and incidental modifications; but though being denotes the factually existent, still existing is no more than the reality of substantial forms along with their mainly immanent supportions and consequences. (See S. Mancion, <u>Le jugement d'existence chez Aristote</u>, Louvain-Paris 1946; J. Orans, <u>The Doctrine of Heing in Aristotle's Metaphysius</u>, Toronto <u>Provider</u>? Pontified Inditits & Modicend Studies, 1951.)

Qui a plainly this position is joing to give rise to a probles of the unity of the notion of being. Aristotle broke with his Percenidean and Platonist Enteredents by identifying being with the concrete ardverse as, in fact, it is known to be. But Aristotle did not broak with their supposition that the notion of being was a conceptual contact. He asked what being is. In other words, he supposed that being is some conceptual content and he demoded what act of unlegstanding occurred prior to the formulation of that douteat. But, as we have seen, being can be defined by us only indiractly, and so Aristotle was unable to assign any specific act of understanding that resulted in the conceptual content of being. However, the conspicuous type of acts of understanding is the insight that grasps intelligible form emergent in sensible data; and so Aristotle assigned the ontological principle, form, as the ground of being in things and the cognitional act of grasping form as the include from which origin tas the conceptual content, being.

In this furthion, medidevel Scholasticism inheritod a proproblem. Is the notion of being one or is it many? If it is one,

C

С

- 147 -

599 31

is its unity the unity of a single content or is it the unity of a function of variable contents?

Henry of Ghent seems to have held that the unity of being is merely the unity of a name. God is and I am. In both cases, being is affirmed. But the realities affirmed are simply disparate.

Duns Scotus contended that, besides the unity of the name, there is also a unity of content. If no part or aspect of you is by identity a part or aspect of way still neither of us is sothing. There is, then, some minimal conceptual content that positively constitutes that is expressed negatively by the negation of nothing. What it is, cannot be declared by appealing to other positive contents, for it is one of the ultimate atoms of thought: it is simply simple. Chill one can approach it by noting that Socretes supposes man, man supposes animal, animal supposes living material substance, and substance supposes a something that is even less determinate and less exclusive. The concept of being is the concept with least connotation and greatest denotation. Moreover, it is essentially abstract. What it denotes, is never just being, but either the infinite or some finite so lo of being, where the code is to be viewed not as some forther and distinct content but rather as an intrinsic variation of basic, indeterminate content. (See L.B. Nolter, The Trunscendentals and their Function in the Matabhysics of Duns Scotus, Mashington: (18)1946; A . Mare, L'Idée de l'être chez saint Thomas et dans la scholastique portáriouro, Arch. de Phil. X, 1933, 31-49).

The as de Vio Caletanus was no more satisfied with the Bootist view, then Scotus himself had been satisfied with that of Henry of Cheat. If a single name without a single meaning will not CUA = Calhdulluivershy filturity.

Ω

O

0

- 143 -

do, neither will a single meaning that as single seems restricted to the order of thought. Accordingly, Cajetan worked out his theory of the unity of a function of variable contents. Just as "double" denotes in all coronaly the relation of 2 to 1, 4 to 2, 6 to 3, and so forth, so "being" denotes indifferently the proportion of essence to existence or, as we might say, the proportion between what is for malated by thought and what is added to it by judgment. On this position the notion of being allays includes some conceptual content but it may include any; (again, boing in act will never be known without some affirmative judgment, but the affirmation is never mere affirmation nor the affirmation of an indeterminate content: it is always the affirmation of some determinate content, and any affirmable, determinate content will do. In bring, Caletan can grant that atomic conceptual contents are meny and lisparate: he can deny the Scotist view that there is some common factor, some positive counterpart of "not nothing", of absolutely universal denotation; and yet by his theory of the unity of a function of variable contents, he can possess not only a single name, being, and a single notion of being, but also a single notion that is applicable to anything that in fact, is known to exist. (A. Marc., Op. cit. 50-66).

000

It is to be noted th t, if Scotus stands for the Parmenidean and Platonist suppositions from which Aristotle did not free himself, Cajetan stands for the main orientation of Aristotelian thought but succeeds in doing so only by going beyond it. If conceptual contents are products of acts of understanding that grasp forms emergent in sensible presentations, one may well export such contents to be a dispa rate multiplicity. Hence,

C

C

O

- 149

Aristotle answered the question, What is being? not by assigning a conceptual content but assigning the ground of being in the general object of understanding, form. Since fores are many, it follows that the ground of being is a variable; further, it follows that if the notion of being is to be one, then its unity will have to be the unity of a function of variable contents. That, then, are the variables of then the single function? One of them is form. At first slowt, the obvious conditate for the other is matter. Still, if it wave well would follow that Aristotle's immaterial substance would not belong to the universe of being. To maintain the Aristotelian position in its integrity, it was necessary to make the second variable the virtually unconditioned grasped by reflective understanding and affirmed in judgment: this in the general case is existence, actuality, fact, that combines with oure form or the compound of form and matter to constitute a boing in act.

601,

Brilliant as it is, Cajetan's position has its short#comings. It envisance an oppresate of concrete beings each of which is constituted of easence and existence. It offers as the naity of the notion of being the relation or proportion of shat is conceived to its being affirmed. But it does not elucidate how that relation emerges in our knowledge as a single notion; and it gives no clue to decount for the fact that by "being", we mean, not only this and that being, but everything, totality, the univance. In brief, Cajetan seems to have been more interested in explaining the unity of the notion of being then the notion itself.

To complete Cejetan's position, it is necessary to go back to his master, St. Thomas Aquinas. For Aquinas, as for Aristotle,

- 150 -

0

000

human intellect is a potential comipotence, a <u>potens omnia facere</u> <u>et fieri</u>. But A quinas could exploit that affirmation in a commer that would have startled Aristotle.

First, he recognized an unrestricted desire to know. As soon as the learn of Gol's existence, we wish to understand His nature. To achieve such understanding is beyond the power of our natural depacity, yet in such achievement lies our spontaneously desired beatitude. (I, 12, 1, ff: I-II, 3, 3: 5, 5).

Secondly, the unrestrictedness native to intellect grounds the effirmation that the object of intellect has to be being. Because intellect is <u>sotons ognia fieri</u>, its object is <u>ens</u>. (I,79, 7,c). Being and everything are equivalent notions.

Thirdly, for the same reason, an intellect fully in act must be infinite and uncreated act. Any created intellect must in formation one menner be potential, and our intellects start from a zero of potentiality. (1,79,2 c. CG. II,98).

Fourthly, none the less, being is <u>per seaud</u> naturally known to us (<u>CG</u>, II, S3, 51), and it cannot be unknown to us. (De Ver. 11,1,3n). Aviations had interpreted Aristotle's adapt intellect a series separate isometerial substance. Aquinas found it immanent within us; the light of intelligence, which is in us, performs the functions Aristotle attributed to agent intellect, and, moreover, Aristotle compared agent intellect to a light. (<u>CG</u>, II, 77, 5). Augustics had advanced that our knowledge of truth originated, not without but within us, yet not simply within us, but in some illumination in thich we conculted the sternal

O

O

0

- 151 -

603

grounds and norms of things. Aquinas explained that we consult the eternal ground and norms, not by taking a look at them, but by having within us a light of intelligence that is a created participation of the eternal and uncreated light. $(\mathbf{T}_{,}84,5,c.)$

٢

 \odot

C

Fifthly, though being is naturally known, though our intellects are created participations of uncreated light, still, there is no valid ontological argument for the existence of God $(I_2, lc.)$. God's knowledge of being is a priori; lie is the act of understanding that grasps everything about everything; but we advance towards knowledge by asking the explanatory question, <u>Quid sit</u>? and the factual question, <u>An sit</u>?

In such positions it is easy to discern not only the justification of Cajetan's theory of analogy but also the elements which that theory tends to overlook. Prior to conception and to judement, there is the dynamic orientation of intelligent and rational consciousness with its unrestricted objective. This orientation is man's capacity to raise questions and thereby, fgenerate knowledge. Immenent within man, it is sperk of the divine. Cognate to God, still it is knowing, not in act but in sheer potency. As it is the cormon root of intelligent grasp and reasonable judgment, so also it is the root of the relation or proportion between the conceived essence and the affirmed existence. A s its objective is unrestricted, so it regards not only single compounds of essence and existence but also the universe, totality, infinity.

It has been noted how Cajetan saves the main orientation of Aristotelian thought by going beyond it and, though this involves still more metaphysics, it may be added how Aquinas does so.

152

Aristotle asked what being is. But "What?" is just a disguised "Why?", What the question really asks for is the ground of being, and so Aristotle asswered by indicating substantial form as the immement cause of each being. But since his substantial form was not some unique and separate Platonic Idea, his enswer gave rise to the problem of the unity of the notion of being. Now if Aquinas were to ask the same question, his answer would be that God is the ground of being; God's own being is self-explanatory and necessary; by the Aristotelian theorem of the identity of knower and known, God's being is identical with God's unlerstanding; by that single act of understanding, God understands himself, and so he understands his our power, and so he understands all that by that power could be produced. God, then, is the act of understanding that grasps everything about overything. The content of the divine act of intellect is the iles of being and so, precisely because our intellects are potential, they can define being only at a second remove as whatever is to be known by intelligent grasp and reasonable affirmation.

604

- 36

Again, both the position of Cajetan and the position of Scotus stand within the field accessible to the logician. By going behind that field to its dynamic basis, one can find the ground not only of Cajetan's proportion but also of Scotus' minimal content. What is it that is common to every conceptual content? It is that all are underspinned and penetrated by the pure leaire's intention of its unrestricted objective. The Scotist notion of being is reached by fistinguishing between the penetrating intention of being and the penetrated conceptual content; from instance to

- 153 -

0

0

0

instance the conceptual content differs; but in every instance, there is the anticipating, enveloping, penetrating intention, and that is what the Costist alloges to be a common *Pector* in all contents.

.05

37

Still if the intention of being is a common fector in all conceptual contents, it is also a dynamic fector that goes beyond them. To set aside this dynamism is to mullify not only that lies beyond the conceptual contents but also the intention of being itself. In a fectous little treatise, Aquinas had r marked, "Essentia dicitur secondum quod per can at in an ensked esse." It is in and through essences that teing has existence. Hence, being apart from essence is being apart from the possibility of existence: it is being that cannot exist; but what cannot exist is nothing, and so the notion of being apart from essence is the notion of nothing.

It will be worth grasping why Scotus felt he could escape this conclusion while Hegel felt that he could not avoid it. Scotus felt he could avoid it because he conceived knowing, not as process that reaches a complete increment in judgment, but as taking a look. Then icotus separated his notion of being from other conceptual contents, he also deparated that notion from the possibility of judgment. Still that separation did not imply for Scotus a separation from the possibility of knowing, for he viewed knowing, not as ultimately constituted by judging, but as essentially a matter of looking. He would grant that there was no look in which the seen was solely the common content that he named being. But he would insist that that common content was included in the

- 154 ---

0

С

O

 \mathbf{O}

object of avery intellectual intuition, and still more would insist that a look at nothing, an intuition of nothing, was abound. In brief, for the Scotist, being is an aspect of the real at which intellect looks; the theory of modes and the distinction between quidditative and demoninative being are efforts to blow this aspect up to the dimensions of the whole. For the Themist, on the other hand, being is the whole of what intelligence anticipates; it is the objective of an unrestricted, dynamic orientation; it is whatever intelligent grasp and reasonable affirmation will determine; and so the notion of being is open to all the incomplete and partial moments from thick cognitional process suffers without over remouncing its all-inclusive goal.

606

Analysis of the sith an unrestricted objective. But he could not identify that objective with a universe of being, with a realm of the objective. But he could be accumplicated of the second ing consists in taking a look. The utilizate conclusion was that it did not and could not. If the realer loss not hisself accept that conclusion of being with the upped did and so Hogel could not take advected of the destist escape from the thertifiestion of the notion of being with the upped with the could not identify that objective with a universe of being, with a realm of function is of a sufficiency. For being as fact can be reached only in so far as the virtually unconditioned is reached; and as Kaat hed ignored that constitutive component of judgment,

Θ

0

C

- 155 -

601 39

so Hegel neither rediscovered nor re-established it. The only objective Hegel can offer the pure desire is a universe of all-inclusive concreteness that is devoid of the existential, the factual, the virtually unconditioned. There is no (thype-er) reason why such an objective should be maded being. It is, as Hegel named it, an Absolute Idea. It is the all-inclusive submit of the pure desire's immanent dielectical process from position through oppiesition to sublation that yields a new position to recommence the triadic process until the Absolute Idea is reached.

Not if the intention that is the outer desire has notitier a Scotist reality of which it can look buck, nor a Thomist universe of existents, to which it can look forward, none the less, in psychological fact it underspins and ponetrates all conceptual contents. It constitutes, then, a common factor in all conceptual contents; it can be distinguished from them, for it is identical with non-r of them yet, as distinguished from them, it becomes indistinguishable from the notion of nothing; for the only ground of the latter distinction we all be that it looked back or forward to something.

It is intreesting to note that, if the foregoing succeeds in fixing fundamental features of Hegel's thought, by that very fact it shows that on Hegelian criteria, Hegelianism is mistaken. Hegel's System is not afraid of facts; it explains any fact elleged against it by showing it to be a monifestation of an incomplete viewpoint included within the System. degel's System is not afraid of contradictions; it explains any contradiction alleged a sizet it by revealing that opened and incomplete viewpoints, accounted

C

O

C

- 156 -

for by the System, yield the alleged contradictory terms. The only thing the System has to fear is that it itself should be no more than some incomplete viewpoint and, in fact, that is what it is. Negel aimed at rehabilitating the speculative reason that Kant had dethroned. But the basis of the Kantian attack was that the unconditioned is not a constitutive component of judgment. A complete rehabilitation of human rational consciousness will show that the unconditioned is a constitutive component of juigment. This, Hegel did not do. His viewpoint is essentially the viewpoint of a thinker who does not and connot regard the factual as unconditioned, who cannot acknowledge any factually fixed points of reference, who cannot advance by distinguishing the definitively certain, the move or less probable, and the unknown. Hegel's range of vision is enormous; indeed, it is unrestricted in extent. But it is always restricted in content, for it views everything as it would be if there were no facts. It is a restricted viewpoint that can topple outwards into the factualness of Marx or inwards into the factualness of Kierkegaard. It is a viewpoint that is transcended automatically by acyone that, in any instance, grasps the virtually unconditioned and affirms it.

For this reason, we placed the discussion of Self-affirmation prior to the discussion of the Notion of Being. Self-affirmation is the affirmation of the knower, conscious empirically, intelligently, rationally. The pure desire to know is a constituent element both of the affirming and of the self that is affirmed. But the pure desire to know is the notion of being as it is spontaneously operative in cognitional process and being itself is the to-be-known towards which that process heads.

- 157 -

0

0

O

human intellect is a potential omnipotence, a <u>potens omnia facere</u> <u>et fieri</u>. But Aquinas could exploit that affirmation in a manner that would have startled Aristotle.

First, he recognized an unrestricted desire to know. As soon as we learn of God's existence, we wish to understand His nature. To achieve such understanding is beyond the power of our natural capacity, yet in such achievement lies our spontaneously desired beatitude. (I, 12, 1, ff.; I-II, 3, 8; 5,5).

Secondly, the unrestrictedness native to intellect grounds the effirmation that the object of intellect has to be being. Because intellect is <u>potens omnia fieri</u>, its object is <u>ens</u>. (I, 79, 7, c). Being and everything are equivalent notions.

Thirdly, for the same reason, an intellect fully in act must be infinite and uncreated act. Any created intellect must in some manner be potential, and our intellects start from a zero of potentiality. (1, 79, 2 c. <u>OG.</u> II, 98).

Fourthly, none the less, being is <u>per se</u> and naturally known to us (<u>CC</u>. II, 83, #31) and it cannot be unknown to us. (De Ver. 11, 1, 3m). Avicenna had interpreted Aristotle's agent intellect as some separate inumaterial substance. Aquinas found it immanent within us; the light of intelligence, which is in us, performs the functions Aristotle attributed to agent intellect, and, moreover, Aristotle compared agent intellect to a light. (<u>CC</u>.II, 77, #5). Augustine had advanced that our knowledge of truth originated, not without but within us, yet not simply within us,

 \mathbf{C}

O

C

THE NOTION OF OBJECTIVITY

Chapter XIII

n

Ö

Human knowing is cyclic and cumulative. It is cyclic inasmuch as cognitional process advances from experience through inquiry and reflection to judgment, only to revert to experience and recommence its ascent to another judgment. It is cumulative, not only in memory's store of experiences and understanding's clustering of insights, but also in the coalescence of judgments into the context named knowledge or mentality.

This complexity of our knowing involves a parallel complexity in our notion of objectivity. Principally the notion of objectivity is contained within a patterned context of jungments which serve as implicit definitions of the terms, object, subject. But besides this principal and complete notion, there also are partial aspects or components emergent within cognitional process. Thus, there is an experiential aspect of objectivity proper to sense and empirical consciousness. There is a normative aspect that is contained in the contrast between the detached and unrestricted desire to know and, on the other hand, mershy subjective desires and fears. Finally, there is an absolute aspect that is contained in single judgments considered by themselves insenuch as each rests on a grasp of the unconditioned and is posited without reservation.

- 158 -

.+...

1. The Principal holion

O

О

С

Principally, the notion of objectivity is contained in a patterned context of judgments. For one may define as object any A, B, C, D,.... where, in turn, A,B, C, D,.... are defined by the correctness of the set of judgments:

A is; B is; C is; D is; neither A isabet B nor C nor D nor Neither D is not C nor D nor Neither C is not D nor 610

2

Again, one may define a subject as any object, say A, where it is true that A affirms himself as a knower in the sense explained in the section on self-affirmation.

The bace essentials of this notion of objectivity are reached if we add to the judgments already discussed, viz., I am a knower, This is a typewriter, the further judgment that I am not this typewriter. An indefinite number of further objects may be added by making the additional appropriate positive and negative judgments. Finally, in so far as one can intelligently grasp and reasonably affirm the existence of other knowers besidep onesalf, one can add to the list of objects that $\int are [also]/$ subjects.

The properties of the principal notion of objectivity have now to be noted. First, as has already been remarked, the notion resides in a context of judgments: without a plurality of judgments that satisfy a definite pattern, the notion does not emerge. Secondly, there follows an immediate corollary; the principal notion of objectivity, as defined, is not contained in any single judgment and, still less, in any experiential or normative factor

- 159 -

that occurs in cognitional process prior to judgment. Thirdly, the validity of the principal notion of objectivity is the same as the validity of the set of judgments that contain it; if the judgments are correct, then it is correct that there are objects and subjects in the sense defined, for the sense defined is simply the correctness of the appropriate pattern of judgments.

Fourthly, to turn to certain broader aspects of the princival notion, judgments in the appropriate pattern commonly are made and commonly and remaind as correct. It follows that commonly, people will know objects and subjects and that commonly, they will be surprised that any doubt should be entertained about the matter. On the other hand, it does not follow that people will commonly be able to give a lucid account of their knowledge of objects and subjects. For the lucid account employs the somewhat recondite art of implicit definition and, at the same time, people are apt to jump to the conclusion that so evident a matter as the existence of objects and subjects must rest on something as obvious and conspicuous as the experiential aspect of objectivity, Hence, on the one hand, they will say that the typewriter 10 an object because they see it or feel it; on the other hand, however, they will admit that would not consider the typewriter an object if they knew it to be true either that there was no typewriter at all or that what they named a typewriter was identical with everything else.

Fifthly, the principal notion of objectivity is closely related to the notion of being. Being is what is to be known through the totality of correct judgments. Objectivity in its principal

- 160 -

С

0

С

617 4

sense is what is known through any set of judgments satisfying a determinate pattern. In brief, there is objectivity 12 there are distinct beings, some of which both know themselves and know others as others. Moreover, the notion of being explains why objectivity in its principal sense is to be reached only through a pattern of judgments. For the notion of being becomes determinate only in so far as judgments are made; prior to judgment, one can thick of being but one cannot know it; and any single judgment is but a minute increment in the process towards knowing it. Again, being is divided from within; apart from being there is nothing; it follows that there connot be a subject that stands outside being and looks at it: the subject has to be before he can look; and, once he is, then he is not outside boing but either the shale of it or some part. If he is the whole of it, then he is the sole object. If he is only a part, then he has to begin by knowing a multiplicity of parts (A is; B is; A is not B) and add that one part knows others (I am A).

Sixthly, the principal notion of objectivity solves the problem of transcendence. How does the knower get beyond himself to a known? The question is, we suggest, misleading. It supposes the knower to know himself and asks how he can know anything else. Our an wer involves two elements. On the one hand, we contend that, while the knower may experience himself or think about himself without julging, still he cannot know himself until he makes the correct affirmation, I am, and then, we contend that other judgments are equally possible and reasonable, so that through experience, inquiry, and reflection there arises knowledge of other

Θ

0

O

- 161 -

objects both as beings and as being other than the knoter. Hence, we place transcendence, not in going beyond a known knower, but in heading for being within which there are positive differences and, among such differences, the difference between object and subject. Inasmuch as such judgments occur, there is in fact, objectivity and transcendence; and thether or not such judgments are correct, is a distinct question to be resolved along the lines reached in the analysis of judgment.

613

2. Absolute Objectivity Besides the principal notion of objectivity, there also are the partial a pacts of experimental, normative, and absolute objectivity. It will be convenient to begin from the last of the three.

The ground of absolute objectivity is the virtually unconditioned that is graphed by reflective understanding and posited in judgment. In - formally unconditioned, which has no conditions at all, stands outside the interglocked field of condition and conditioned; it is intrinsically absolute. The virtually succenditioned stands within that field; it has conditions; it itself is among the conditions of other instances of the conditioned; still its conditions are fulfilled; it is a <u>de facto</u> absolute.

Because the content of the judgment is an absolute, it is withdrewn from relativity to the subject that utters it, the place in which he utters it, the time at which he utters it. Caesar's crossing of the Hubicon was a contingent event occurring is a particular place and time. But a true affirmation of that event is an eternal, immutable, definitive validity. For if it is true that he did cross, then no one whatever at any place or time can

С

С

- 162 -

truly deny that he did.

റ

С

Hence, it is in virtue of absolute objectivity that our knowing acquires that has been named its publicity. For the same reason that the unconditioned is withdrawn from relativity to its source, it also is accessible not only to the knower that utters it but also to any other knower.

614

Again, it is the absolute objectivity of the unconditioned that is formulated in the logical principles of identity and contradiction. The principle of identity is the immutable and definitive validity of the true. The principle of contradiction is the exclusiveness of that validity. It is, and what is opposed to it, is not.

Further, ab olute objectivity pertains to single judgments as an 19. As has been argued, the principal notion of objectivity is constituted only by a suitable constellation of judgments. But each judgment in such a conctellation is an obsolute and, moreover, it is an ab olute in virtue of its our affirmation of the unconditioned. The vehicity of the principal notion is a derived validity resting on the set of absolutes it involves. But the absolute aspect of objectivity has its ground in the single judgment to which it pertains. It is quite compatible with the affirmation that there is but one being, that there is no object except the affirming subject; accordingly, the absolute aspect of objectivity does not imply any subject-object relation; it constitutes the entry of our knowing into the realm of being but, by itself, it does not sufficiency erises, not from some defect of absolute

- 163 -

615)

1

objectivity, nor because the posited beings, their distinction, and their relations are not all unconditioned, but because several jugments are needed to posit, to distinguish, and to relate.

It is important not to confuse the absolute objectivity of any correct julys of with the inverience proper to the expression of universal julysmins. Both universal and particular judgments, if correct, are absolutely objective. But the former are expressed invariantly because the expression is independent of variations in spatio-temporal reference frames, while the latter are expressed relatively because their expression loss not onjoy such independonce. However, the variation of the expression presurposes and reveals the absolute objectivity of that is expressed. Becaute "I am here now" has absolute objectivity, you can independ that is an identical only by exploying the different words, "he var there then".

Again, absolute objectivity has no implications of an absolute space or of an absolute time. If it is true that space is, then what in absolute is the truth and not the space. Whether the space is absolute or relative, is a further question. If it is true that space consists of an infinite set of immovable and empty places, then space is absolute. If it is true that space is not such a set, then space is relative. Which is correct? At 1 est, the issue cannot be settled by appealing to the fact that a true judgment posits an unconditioned.

Further, as 2 and argued, to affirm that something or other is, does not imply that it is within space. If it did, one could ask whether or not the space (within which it is) is. If not, that space is nothing and to affirm things within nothing is meaningless. If, however, it is, then since "to be" is "to be within space", the

- 164 -

 \mathbf{O}

question recurs; if "X is" means "X is within space", it would seem to follow that "space is" means that "space is within space"; the second space cannot be identical with the first, else it would not contain it; and if it is distinct, then it can be only by being within a further space, and so on indefinitely.

The same argument holds for being within time. If "to be" is "to be at some time", then either there is time or there is not. If there is not, then "to be at some time" is really a mere "to be". If there is time, then it has to be at some time, and that at some time, and so forth to infinity.

Interpretations of being or of absolute objectivity in terms of space and time are more intrusions of imagination. Absolute objectivity is simply a property of the unconditioned; and the unconditioned, as such, says nothing about space or time. If one's imagination makes the use of the proposition "within" imperative, then one may say that every judgment is within a context of other judgments and that every unconditioned is within a universe of being. Then "space is" by being within the universe of being, and"time is" by being within the universe of being, where to "be vitain the universe of being" is to "be unconditioned along mathiness of the with otherAunconditioned is.

Normative Objectivity The second of the partial aspects of objectivity is the normative. It is objectivity as opposed to the subjectivity of wishful thinking, of each of excessively cautious judgments, of allowing joy or samess, hope or fear, love or detestation, to interfere with the proper march of cognitional process.

3.

С

The ground of normative objectivity lies in the unfolding of the unrestricted, detached, disinterested desire to know.

- 165 -

617

Because it is unrestricted, it opposes the obscurantism that hides truth or blocks access to it; in whole or in part. Because it is detached, it is opposed to the inhibitions of cognitional process that arise from other human desires and drives. Because it is disinterested, it is opposed to the well-meaning but disastrous reinforcement that other desires lend cognitional process only to twist its orientation into the narrow confines of their limited range.

Normative objectivity is constituted by the immanent exigence of the pure desire in the pursuit of its unrestricted objective. A dynamic orientation defines its objective. No less, it defines the means towards attaining its objective. Not only, does the pure desire head for the universe of being, but also it does so by desiring to understand and by desiring to grasp the understood as unconditioned. Hence, to be objective, in the normative sense of the term, is to give free rein to the pure desire, to its questions for intelligence, and to its questions for reflection. Further, it is to distinguish betwen questions for intelligence that admit proximate solutions and other questions of the same type that, at present, cannot be solved. Similarly, it is to distinguish between sound questions and, on the other hand, meaningless questions, or incoherent or illegitimate questions. For the pure desire not only desires; it desires intelligently and reasonably; it desires to understand because it is intelligent and it desires to grasp the unconditioned because it desires to be reasonable.

Upon the normative exigences of the pure desire rests the validity of all logics and all methods. A logic or method is not

- 166 -

0

an ultimate that can be ostablished only by a hullabalou of starry-eyed praise for Medieval Philosophy or for Modern Science, along with an insecure resentment of everything else. Logic and method are intelligent and rational; their grounds are not belief nor propaganda nor the pragmatic utility of atom-bombs and nylon stockings; their grounds are the inner exigence of the pure desire to know. They are to be accepted in so far as they succeed in formulating that dynamic exigence; and they are to be revised in so far as they fail.

10

In various manners this dependence has already been noted. Thus, the logical principles of identity and contradiction result from the unconditioned and the compulsion it exercises upon our reasonableass. The principle of excluded middle possesses ultimate but not immediate validity; it possesses ultimate validity because, if a julgment occurs, it must be either an affirmation or a denial: it does not possess immediate validity, for with respect to each proposition, rational consciousness is presented with the three alternatives of affirmation, of negation, and of seeking a better understanding and so a more adquate formulation of the iscne. Again, the procedures of empirical method in its classical and statistical phases have been accounted for by the pure desire's movement towards understanding, towards an understanding that regards not only things as related to us by our senses but also, things as related functionally among themselves, towards an understanding that presupposes data to admit systematization in the classical phase and, in other respects, to be non-systematic and so necessitate a statistical phase. Finally, precepts regarding judgment can

- 167 -

О

619) 11

0

be derived from the general requirement of the unconditioned and from the special circumstances of different kinds of judgments which may be primitive or derived, theoretical or concrete, descriptive or explanatory, cortain or probable.

4.

С

Experiential objectivity The third partial expect of objectivity is the experiential. It is the given as one of this the field of materials about which one inquires, in which she finds the fulfilment of conditions for the unconditioned, to which conditional process repeatedly returns. to generate the series of inquiries and reflections that yield the contextual manifold of judgments.

Further, the given is unquestionable and indubitable. What is constituted by answering cuestions, can be upset by other questions. <u>Fut</u> the given is constituted apart from questioning; it remains the same no matter what the result of questioning may be: it is unquestionable in the sense that it lies outside the cognitional levels constituted by questioning and answering. In the same fashion the given is indubitable. That can be doubted is the answer to a question for reflection; it is a "Yes" or a "No". But the given is not the on wor to ony question; it is prior to questioning and independent of any an wers.

Agein, the given is residual and, of itself, diffuse. It is possible to select elements in the given and to indicate them clearly and precisely. But the selection and indication are the work of insight and formulation, and the given is the residue that remains when one subtracts from the indicated 1) the instrumental act of meaning by shich one indicates, 2) the concepts expressed

- 168 -

by that instrumental act, 3) the insights on which the concepts rest. Hence, since the given is just the residue, since it can be selected and indicated only through intellectual activities, of itself it is diffuse; the field of the given contains differences, but in so far as they simply lie in the field, the differences are unassigned.

Again, the field of the given is equally valid in all its parts but differently significant in different parts.

It is equally would in all its parts in the sense that there is no screening prior to inquiry. dcreening is the fruit of inquiry. It takes place once inquiry has begue.

It is differently significant in different parts in the sense that some parts are significant for some departments of knowledge and other marks for other departments. The phy idist has to disregard that he werely imagines, merely dreams, merely derives from his perconal equation. The psychologist has to explain imagination, dreaming, and personal equations. Hence, once inquiry begins, the first step is the screening that selects the calevant field of the given.

Lience We are employing the name, "givon", in an extremely broad sense. It includes not only the verifical deliverances of outer sense but also indges, dreams, illusions, hallucinations, personal equations, subjective bias, and so forth. No doubt, a more restricted use of the term world be derivable, if we dere speaking from the limited viewpoint of natural science. But we are working at a general theory of objectivity and so we have to acknowledge as given not only the materials into which natural

- 169 -

0

С

0

science incuires but also the materials into shich the psychologist or methodologist or cultural historian inquires.

0

13

21

There is a profounder reason. Our account of the given is extrinsic. It involves no description of the stream of sensitive consciousness. It involves no theory of that stream. It discusses maither the contribution of the expirically conscious subject nor the contribution of other "outside" agents. It simply notes that ceflection and judgment presuppose understanding, that inquiry and understanding presuppose materials for inquiry and something to be understanding presuppose materials will be unquestionable and indubitable, for they are not constituted by anywaring quastions. They will be residual and diffuse, for they are what is left over once the fruits of inquiry and reflection are subtracted from cognitional contents.

B. M. S. A. Market and M. S. Market and A. Market and M. Mar Market and M. Market and Market and M. Market and

O

0

do - such unquestionable and indubitable, residual and diffuse materials for inquiry and reflection must be reparded as equally valid in all their parts. Nore they all invalid, there could be neither inquiry nor reflection, and so no reasonable pronormeement that they are invalid. More some valid and others invalid, there would have to be a reasonably affirmed principle of selection; but such a principle can be grasped and reasonably affirmed only after inquiry has begun. Prior to inquiry there can be no intelligent discrimination and no reasonable rejection.

There is still a deeper reason. Why is the given to be defined extrinsically? Because all objectivity rests upon the unrestricted, detached, disinterested desire to know. It is that desire that sets up the canons of normative objectivity. It is

- 170 -

(622- 14

that desire that gives rise to the absolute objectivity. It is that desire that gives rise to the absolute objectivity implicit in juggeont. It is that desire that yields the constellation of judgeonts that implicitly define the principal notion of distinct objects in the universe of being, some of which know others. Experiential objectivity has to rest on the same basis, and so the given is defined, not by appealing to sensitive process, but by the pure desire recarding the flow of empirical consciousness as

5

the materials for its operation. Characteristics of the Astron An account has been given of a principal notion of objectivity and of its three partial aspects, the experiential, the normative, and the absolute. However, there also exists subjectivity, and the reader may be inclined to find in the present section a full confirmation of a suspicion that he has for some time entertained, namely, that we have failed to place our finger on what is objective, that we have failed to place our finger on what is objective, that we have failed to place our finger on what is objective, that we have failed to place our finger on what is objective, that we have failed to place our finger on what is objective, that we have failed to place our finger on what is objective, that we have failed to place our finger on what is objective, that we have failed to place our finger on what is objective, that we have failed to place our finger on what is objective, that we have failed to place our finger on what is objective, that we have failed to place our finger on what is objective, that we have a confusing with the objective either in part or in whole what really is subjective. To doal with this problem will call for further and wather complex investigation but, before we go on to it, let us note the more general characteristics of the notion of objectivity that has just been outlined.

First of all, Hespite its complexity, it can be the notion of objectivity that common sense presupposes and utilizer. The principal notion is implicit within a suitable pattern of judgments; it arises automatically when the julgments that happen to be made fall within such a pattern. The absolute aspect is implicit in judgment for, as we have argued at length, judgment affirms the unconditioned that reflective understanding grasps. The

- 171 -

0

O

О

normative aspect is not any set of rules that has to be invested; it results from the intelligent inquiry and the reflective reasonablemess that are the unfolding of the pure desire to know. Finally, the experiential aspect, while it may appear to do violence to common evense expectations, is fully in accord with scientific practice which claims to be an extension and refinement of common sense.

,23

Secondly, the notion of objectivity that has been outlined is a minimal notion. Phere arises the question, What is objectivity? If the snower is to be intelligent and reasonable, then the pure desire and its normative edisonces must be respected. Moreover, there must be materials into which intelligence inquires and which peasonableness reflects. Further, if there is a definitive answer, the unconditioned and so the absolute will be attained. Finally, if the question and answer have a point, there will be other judgments which, if they occur in an appropriate pattern, will yield the principal notion.

Thirdly, our notion of objectivity bags no questions. Just as our notion of being does not lecide between expiricism and rationalism, positivism and idealism, existentialism and realism, but leaves that decision to the content of correct judgments that are made, so also our notion of objectivity is equally open. If judgments occur in the appropriate pattern, then it involves a plurality of knowing subjects and known objects. If in effect, there is only one true judgemnt, say, the affirmation of the Hegelian. Absolute Idea, our notion of objectivity undergoes no formal modification. If true judgments are never reached, there arises

O

С

0

- 172 -

Chapter XV : Elements of Metaphysics. Foot-note to p. 704.

The relation of potency, form, and act, as defined, to Scholastic <u>potentia</u>, <u>forma</u>, <u>actus</u>, may be bracketed under the three headings of technique, principle, and method.

My definitions are systematic. Ine contrast, the normative influence exercised by the Scholastic disputation set a premium on definitions that were nominal, that prescinded from systematic views, that stated what would be meant by the members of any school.

Becondly, the principles on which my definitions are based would be rejected by the conceptualist wing of Scholastic thinkers. Because conceptualists deny insight, they eliminate what I mean by form. Because they conceive abstraction as impoverishing, they eliminate the distinction I draw between potency and form and deny its implication that matter is a principle of individuation. Because they consider judgment to be an <u>adhaesic mentis</u> that does not augment the content of knowledge, they eliminate the distinction I draw between form and act and deny its implication of a real distinction between essence and contingent existence.

Thirdly, the Scholastics that employ systematic definitions and hold principles similar to my own follow quite a different method. While the present metaphysics is epistemologically constructed in terms of the <u>causa commescendi</u>, theirs is entelogically constructed in terms of the <u>causa escendi</u>; and while my starting-point is restricted to propertionate being, theirs contains an explicit reference to transcendent being in a theorem on the intrinsic illimitation of act and the limiting roles of form and potency. Accordingly, it is only at the end of Chapter XIX that the isomorphism between Thomism and the present metaphysics can begin to appear.

0

0

О